

# Unknown Tendencies.

A psychological horror/triller by B.J Starink.

Let the Tendencies trilogy start.





# Unknown Tendencies clean version.

*A book by B.J Starink...*



# Disclaimer...

Title: Unknown Tendencies

Copyright © 2020 - B.J Starink

All rights reserved.

No part of this book may be reproduced or stored in any retrieval system, or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopier, recording, or otherwise, without the express written permission of the publisher.

Cover design B.J Starink.

Websites:

1. <https://mijnbestseller.nl/b.j.starink>
2. <https://amazon.com/author/bjstarink>
3. <https://www.goodreads.com/bjstarink>
4. <https://www.inkitt.com/writetobennie>

*Welcome, we all have:*

***Unknown Tendencies.***

*A psychological horror book by:*

***B. J Starink.***

Before you start reading. Read the verse on the next page!

For this ritual, send the rest of the people out of the room. Protect yourself at all times by pouring salt or other protection around you. Do not break the protection. Keep calm at all times. Should you start reading aloud or in yourself finish it at all times.

*If the Last Breath from The Lord disappears.*

*Then it is waiting for the world to wither away.*

*War and Hunger will reign.*

*Even in their last sigh, Death ignores them.*

*The Might is for the new Lord.*

*Light disappears while all Hope is slain.*

*The End will come, the End was never far away!*

*The End was always within reach.*

*The End will come, the end is near!*

***MAN IS THE GREATEST EVIL!***

*Only NAMTILLAKU will be able to bring order.*

*Only NAMTILLAKU will stop the time.*

*Only NAMTILLAKU will be able to bring JUDGMENT.*

***Namtillaku***

*Namtillaku*

*Namtillaku*

*Where is the last  
resting place of  
mine ?*

*Unknown Tendencies...*

*Preface.*

This is a book for the beginning adult reader. And for people who are not strong in their minds when reading mentally. I myself had to fight my mental battle and overcome it by the train of thought hidden in this book. **Do not worry this is not going to be a whining sob story about that fight!**

**This is not a philosophizing work either, this is straightforward, direct, and with many other visions and reading styles.**

For example, I have not written this book as many do, someone gets on the train and after 4 pages he still isn't there yet. I especially tried (as it says at the very beginning: Fascinating the beginning adult reader) and I hope that I can get a lot of people starting or enjoying reading a book thanks to this well, this thing! It is said by more than half of the world's population: If you have read 1 book, you know them all. And I want to break that with something "completely" new.

A book as everyone can experience it. This is my first book. And I am not fond of rules. In my line of view, rules are there to be broken.

I'm going to try to break all taboos in my Tendencies trilogy, which has to do with the genre of horror.

Believe me, there are many, far too many to be honest. It's about fiction. **So, if you are easily offended my apologies in advance!**



For me, horror is based on legends like "*Sleepy Hollow*"

One of those stories that you used to hear by the campfire and that circulated as a true story. I have resolved to let this book progress as if you heard it around a campfire in the old days. Only something new-fashioned by incorporating something new. Something you don't easily come across. Completely new written in an understandable context. Why should I disguise life when I can put the truth on the table in some way?

**This book is anything but standard!** It strikes me nowadays in a movie or a book that it is rushed. I don't want that: I try to explain the inexplicable in this book. I am curious how that will work out.

I have a warm place for Edgar Allan Poe in my heart,

this is something completely different and cannot be compared at all. But if you are, or would be talking about a superpower then give his poems a chance!

I have written this book the way I want to read a book myself. An understandable book that you hardly get through.

A book without rules (to a certain extent), with a deep underlay, and also enough tension. 11 chapters equal the first cell number of Pope my best friend there. Maikel was the keeper there. I spent 10 days in the detention house and 4 days in the precinct. So, 2 weeks compared to people who have been there for 4 years or longer ain't shit. I had enough time to think with that knowledge.

So, this guy thinks and decides to write a book. Dedicated to my new friends, my mother who has been very concerned, and to my grandfather. I close this preface with a saying of that wise man who has helped me, and which many people can benefit from.

**Rest in peace Cop.**

*The saying: It gets light on your path so it can get dark. But why is it always getting pitch-black in your path? So that you can appreciate the light yet again.*

### *Unknown Tendencies.*

It all started in January 2019, a cold time but still warmer than in previous years. Leaving a difficult time behind. People are moving. To a cheaper house and a better neighborhood. Only they did not know what they ended up in. Pure hell for everyone on this earth, let's be honest what's scarier than your own thoughts?

**Do you know the answer?**

I thought so. The story of real fear starts here. But where it ends, we find out together. I spoil nothing yet, except that everyone can become their own demon through his or her train of thought. This

is the story about the legend called: *Unknown Tendencies*. Hold each other tightly and get ready for the ride.

This will be a nail biter: this will be a safety net that will lift you up.

This story grasps you and doesn't let you go. **This story will lure you in, and grasp you by your lurven!**

So have fun listening and the sight of the warm crackling campfire...

We all know what the world is like. So, I share this story with you, a story when the world was still normal and civilized.

Warm-up with a beer or drink a glass of whiskey while enjoying the marshmallows and don't forget to enjoy the ride, this story starts slowly, but the best legends start with a great build-up before they can grab you. And dear people this is one of them. You will be scared but it will be one you will not soon forget!

Without going through too much about our beautiful club surrounding our warm fire.

I would like to borrow your hearing, open your eyes, and loosen your mind, as I begin the legend.

# *Chapter I.*

## *Day I.*

The move will be a job, but the move is worth it. A new opportunity a new start, but above all a new beginning. Considering what

they've already left behind for it, they more than deserve this opportunity. And after talking to the broker, they both agree that this could be an opportunity out of thousands. The shops are close by, the schools ensure good education at an affordable price plus the supermarket and petting zoo are around the corner. After the conversation with the broker, they were especially enthusiastic about the fact that there was work. Work in abundance. The moving van arrives in the street. And the first to introduce himself is an older man. It is an old gray man against the white. With a smug grin on his arrogant face. He introduces himself to the young woman first. Hi, I'm Tom welcome in the neighborhood. The woman doesn't know where to look. How should she know how to act normally? To such a self-righteous arrogant man but yes, they are the new residents and she has to settle.

The young woman says hello I am Amy (for lack of anything else. She wants to say something but she leaves it to be) you have seen it well: We are your new neighbors in house number 99. Ahh house 99 yes, an older woman lived there.

A very sweet one she reminded me of my own wife god rest her soul... Amy is not sure what to say but tries something anyway.

"She seems like a nice woman."

Tom laughs "yes she was nice indeed." And she also meant a lot to the rest of the street. But I completely forget to introduce myself to the rest. "Sorry guys hello I'm Tom." The man shakes his hand and

says" I am Maikel and this is our rebel Justin and our second son Francis. And our latest addition Chantal."

He gives Justin a hand of Francis a wink and Chantal a small hug. Tom "You stink so I think you pooped." Chantal laughs Tom also starts laughing. And says again

"welcome guys now I'm going away from you, so you can also get used to the neighborhood and its residents." Maikel shakes hands with Tom "Thank you for the warm welcome." Tom walks away without saying anything.

Maikel is the first to get out of the moving van. Justin the second and Francis the third. they help bring Maikel in with the terrarium.

Amy is the only one to sit in the moving van with Chantal in her arms.

She looks around a bit at the greenery in the street and the friendliness. It is not long before she picks up Chantal and brings the pram inside. When she is inside, she immediately feels a sense of calm.

It is evening and the street lamps are turned on. The red copper light is the only thing that illuminates the house so far.

The boxes are unpacked, the beds are assembled and the cabinets are in place. The most important and the heaviest stand in their place too. The water is running and the electricity is now connected. "It is time for the TV to be connected," jokes Maikel. But Amy

doesn't like the joke very much right now. She thinks to herself is all that man can think of? "The children come first. Provide their room with light first, and then you can connect your precious TV." "Yes, Aims sorry Aims I will do Aims." Maikel walks upstairs first looks at Chantal's room, he finds a baby standing in her crib babbling against the wall. Maikel shouts like an occultist seeing the fire for the first time:

**Amy, Amy, Amy Chantal can stand... Amy, Amy, AIMS come over already.** Justin comes in first: What's wrong? "look then, look already Chantal can stand." Justin rubs the sleep out of his eyes and sees Chantal talking to the wall while standing in her bed.

Maikel calls **Amy, Amy come on already.** When Amy climbs the stairs, Maikel jokes while laughing: "here she finally comes" The tired Justin yawns and smiles.

Amy storms into the room and sees Chantal standing there too. A proud feeling warmed her. You know, such a feeling that you can live on for a long time as a mother.

"Oh, girl how beautiful how beautiful you can already stand. how proud I am of you!"

Amy hugs Maikel and says in a loving tone "thank you, Mike." "No need to thank me. I may be even prouder than you." Justin looks again and walks back to his room. Maikel kisses Chantal and walks back downstairs. "Sorry I will connect the lamps with lightbulbs I will do it immediately or tomorrow at the latest. Just let her. God,

I'm so proud of her." Amy has the same feeling and gives him a hug and whispers in his ear "That's a great idea, Mike, it's okay"

She sits down on the sofa and they talk a bit about how proud they both are of their little girl they fall asleep together on the couch. When they wake up, their digital table clock says 06:00 outside it is dark, and inside it is as usual. First, they walk upstairs to Chantal's room to see how the little girl is doing. Chantal wakes up to the sound and seems afraid of her parents. Maikel and Amy don't know what frightened her but she seems terrified of her own parents. Amy bursts into tears and walks downstairs. When she looks at their digital table clock it is still 06:00. She takes her phone out of her back pocket and sees that it is 21:00. She does not understand it, she calls loudly: **Mike Mike Maikel**. But Maikel does not understand it himself. Then the doorbell rings Ting thong Maikel looks a bit confused. And the bell keeps on ringing: Thing -Thong Thing -Thong Thing Ting thong. After that it's quiet...

Amy goes to the door and says with a smile

"Mike, we need a new doorbell as soon as possible."

She opens the door "Hello Tom, what is it that brings you here? Come in. Would you like a cup of coffee or tea? "

He goes inside "Yes a cup of coffee will be nice yes."

Amy goes to the kitchen and asks loudly "**What have you got in your coffee Tom?**" "What's on your mind?" Maikel asks him. Tom rolls his eyes. He doesn't know what happens to him what an



arrogant man that is. Amy "Tom Tom What have you got in your coffee?" Tom "Milk and sugar, please. That would be nice." Maikel knocks on the sofa and says sit down Tom. Tom sits down a bit indignantly and looks around. Amy enters the room with a cup of coffee in her hand.

She looks at Tom and sees something in the reflection of his glasses. She doesn't know what it is. She can't bring it home.

But it looked like yellow-green dots.

Like his pupils were green buttons it seemed very strange but yes that was just in her head so she didn't go into it further. Tom gives Maikel a kind of pat on the hand. Maikel must contain his anger and asks in a quiet tone: *where is that good for Tom?*

He actually wanted to ask something completely different. He wanted to ask,

*"Should I break your arm?"*

Tom looks at him and Maikel sees the same as Amy. Two yellow-green dots in his glasses.

"What a beautiful beast, what is it?" While pointing to the terrarium in front of the window. Maikel says nicely: "thanks Tom, this is a blue skink. Or a blue-tongued skink either way. It is really just a snake on legs with a blue tongue." Maikel has had enough of those green dots that follow him like this. He asks what nice glasses but where did you get them, Tom? Tom give a difficult answer.

*I got it from a place quite far from here, yet close enough to see.*

Maikel asks Did you happen to throw Irish in his coffee? Amy smiles a bit "Unfortunately not Mike we haven't brought that in yet." Tom "I'd rather have real whiskey the Irish is too sweet for me. but in the coffee, it is nice though then you immediately got...." "Sugar in the coffee." says Maikel laughing. **"Yes, sugar in the coffee."** says Tom in a heavier voice than usual. Maikel looks at him and asks

"were you bothered by gas or something?" Again, Tom gives a difficult answer.

*If you look no further than the bridge is long how can you ever see the water?*

Maikel "I think you're a very wise man." Tom apologizes, "What do you mean exactly?" Maikel rubs his hair and can't say one single thing. "Just being a wise man. That you know a thing or two. "

Tom says in a heavy voice:

*Yes, if so, I know a thing or two. I have been everywhere from top to bottom and from bottom to top. Now I am in between I am literally in between so you can see it.*

He starts to laugh. Maikel gets nervous, his Christian upbringing has warned him about stories like this. This is what the devil would say.

Is Tom the devil? An old man? No not at all! Maikel is frightened by his own thoughts. His mother was extremely religious, he didn't really know his father. Every now and then his father came by from the pub smelling of beer and cigarettes.

His mother mainly warned Maikel about the evil in the world. Because we are not alone in this depraved place.

The devil has everyone in his grip. It sometimes seems that way.

As his mom used to say, look at your dad and judge for yourself. So, if he sees Tom like this and hears so mysteriously speaking. He thinks of his mother's lessons. He used to see his mother as an angel. But when she deteriorated and dementia overcome her, he immediately saw her differently. When his mother could no longer be there for him, his father came increasingly in the picture. And he started to understand his devilish father more and more.

This reminds him of that. From the conversations, he had with his father. So basically, he needs to know what to say now but this time he slams shut just like all those times before. Was it the fear of saying something wrong or something else out of this world, supernatural even? How could this be? This is just like before.

A kind of retrospect to a dark time. A time passed or actually forgotten, it was a dark time for him and especially his mother.

Sometimes he still hears the screams and the threats. Especially in his sleep, he never really knew nice dreams.

He still remembers the blows and assaults such as the cigarette butts under his bare feet and on his arms as if it happened just moments ago.

It where things like the antichrist cannot tolerate heat. So, with this, I burn my own antichrist.

Anything to get his mother but Maikel has done something in his very young childhood something that he couldn't or should not do. Something that made his mother see him like a devil's seed in a divine jacket. He can no longer think about this and regrets it very much. But yes, an antichrist has no regrets or regrets.

He couldn't do anything in his youth because of that one mistake. He is now big and he still thinks about his lost childhood every day. He never dreamed he could turn 29 but he is.

He would fight for his family and die fighting for them. And he would show that to this devil in his house talking to his wife and looking disrespectfully at his furniture.

He will teach him until the antichrist cannot be fooled. He's 29 and he's getting older. This devil **never** gets his way! Maikel will do everything to prevent this **impostor**. This **delusions idea** of a man. This **clown** in a leather jacket but especially his **father** will not get his way.

Maikel looks out of his eyes as if he has nothing to lose. As if he has no regrets as if the stories are really true. He turns to Tom and asks:

“do you believe sir? Then you recommend opening the Bible and sticking with it.”

Tom looks at Michael, asking what do you mean. Maikel knows that questioning looks all too well. He says:

*Et filii diaboli semper fidelis erit domus!!*

Tom thinks about it and thinks about it too long in the eyes of Maikel. The dead eyes of the greatest murderer. Tom finally sees it but Tom doesn't know what the words mean. Maikel has now finished the conversation and gives Tom a choice.

*Leave my house or stay! If you leave my house without any struggle, there is nothing wrong. If you stay, I would be honest with you and you can doubt it what you want but then I will give you a gift that you will carry for the rest of your short life. the gift of regret of everything and everyone who you've hurt.*

Tom does not know how to behave and does not know what to do on the couch. Tom makes the right choice and leaves the house. But the last thing Tom says at the door.

Is the drop for Maikel nobody in the street or even Amy has heard only Maikel and Tom know about it?

Maikel clenches his fist and is ready to strike. He is furious at what has been said. He is back in his past as a boy from the past back to repeat his mistake to the old man. But just at the point where he is ready to beat the light out of his eyes and to hit the glasses into his old head, he hears Chantal crying from within. Amy took her down. He thinks what am I doing? And his fist slackens. Tom laughs at a dirty tone, but it doesn't bother him anymore. He must be there for his family. He's 29 and plans to age and not be put in jail by a dirty old man. He slams the door shut and hugs Chantal, says thank you again, sweetheart, and plays with his half-year-old daughter.

They need him for them, he will die just for them. He has a past but they are the future. they are the future and they are given a life as few know it. Their life is going to be perfect! That he screwed up all his life that does not mean they will! Never!

he says again "sorry I'm sorry I didn't know what happened to me!" To Chantal and kisses her. He says "sorry" to Amy again and hugs her. Amy just smiles and says:

"Mikey, I know you don't have to pretend I know, Justin and Francis do too, it doesn't take long for Chantal to know.

I'm convinced you don't even have to say anything. Your past is embedded in your head."

His left eye starts to tear and it is not long before the First and Last tears flow. One single tear but it is enough. Maikel hugs her and doesn't let go for a while. Amy sits down on the comfortable sofa

next to him, Maikel looks at her and knows she wants him to check the electricity. So, without saying anything he starts working on it.

Installing lamps is generally fun and easy work. So, he starts in Francis' room and ends in Chantal's room. When the cables are properly connected, the copper wires are in place and the lamps are fixed, he presses the light button. Francis and Justin sleep well, they are tired after the hustle and bustle of the move. That makes sense, of course, they are still young, one is ten years old, and the other is twelve a young-adult.

Maikel really only thinks it is good that his children sleep and especially the twelve-year-old rebel. They have their hands full on him. How is that going to change when he is sixteen or seventeen? Well questions for another time. Maikel walks to Chantal's room and presses the light button, the light goes on.

He thinks his daughter is going to like this so he walks down and says: "Aims I've had it for today. I've had enough excitement now."

He takes the digital table clock to the bedroom. He puts the time right according to his phone, namely 23.30.

He lies down on the right side of the bed. Amy comes up soon after Maikel and sees that he is already sleeping. Amy doesn't understand why he sleeps on the right side of their way to the oversized bed. Normally he watches the door or he won't fall asleep. Well, he must be tired, she thinks to herself. Amy hardly gets to sleep because of the tumult of Maikel. When she finally falls asleep after a few hours,

they are both awakened by a high beep. It looks like a dog whistle Maikel is the first to hear the beep.

With his hands over his ears, he searches for the cause. Amy only hears the beep when Maikel is looking but the noise comes from all over the house. So the cause cannot be found. The other three are still asleep when he walks into their room. Fortunately, Maikel thinks that he can no longer even hear his own thoughts. Still searching for the cause. Meanwhile, he is disturbed by that beep and then he feels something dripping from his ear.

Immediately when he wipes it away, he hears something falling from the bedroom, their bedroom he does not know what it was, but at least it sounded heavy. He runs to the bedroom and immediately sees if Amy has fallen, but Amy is laughing in their large kingsize bed. "what fell?

Something heavy? is everything well aims? " Amy laughs, "that was that digital clock making that dreadful noise."

"Well, then I think there was a cable loose or something." Amy starts to laugh even more.

It is such a lighting laugh that Maikel automatically laughs with it. Maikel laughingly asks her "Do you have the time? It must be late?"

Amy in the limp laugh "that's the best thing is 06:00." Maikel laughs at it, but the laughter fades away faster than her. 06:00? Wasn't that on the clock? "



Amy starts laughing hysterically

“yes, yes yes that was also on the clock yes that is **humorous.**”

Maikel has lost his smile. This is serious. He’s never seen Amy like this. He does not know if she is afraid, angry, or just too happy.

He is frightened by the thought and laughter of his wife. This can’t be right. This can’t be.

He tries to calm her down, but it is not working at the moment. Amy keeps smiling and laughing it never ends. Until she falls over in bed and snores. Maikel can’t sleep he’s full of adrenaline. So, he kisses Amy and unwraps some more boxes. He tried to give everything a place, most things get a place but other things he does not know where they belong.

What does a meat hook do in its private stuff box, for example? That’s not all he thinks, for example, he also finds a magazine called exit wound and more weird things.

Very strange that his things are not stronger, he has never seen those things. What place do they deserve? What place could I give them? Who has packed them all questions come up to him after seeing the boxes? His stuff is not the strangest stuff he comes across. And who do they belong to? All questions that hopefully should never be answered.

These items don’t have to be mine either, Maikel thinks he knows for sure.

But who do they belong to then? Another question overflows with questions. But he would rather have questions than be sure where they come from.

With questions, the question is whether they will be answered. But a certainty does not need to be answered, right? Another question, the questions and thoughts drive him crazy.

But are they the right questions?

And at that moment I don't know anymore, total silence no more questions or thoughts but just total silence. Amy comes down "when are you going to plug in the TV Mikey?" Maikel smiles Amy is back to normal, he just has rest.

"Yes, I will start on Aims. Nice tonight watching the magical box, looking aimlessly in front of you, staring at a moving image. I do like that a lot."

Amy is not sure what happens to her and she doesn't really dare to ask. Maikel has the same look in his eyes that Tom had.

## *Chapter II.*

*Amy.*

Amy came from a good house and a good family or well whatever you like to think.

She wanted to get away from her father's alcohol addiction and her mother's eternal cry for help. If her mother had been medicated

again and her father had been drinking again, she would always have done it. In the eyes of her mother, she did nothing right, and her mother did nothing right in the eyes of her father. While she sometimes tried to tell her father that her father should stay away from whiskey and beer. Her father then started to scream badly with a blackout as a result. And with all its consequences.

Her mother who just had to be right about everything, against an aggressive drunk. And she who had to jump in every time. She had to lie to her friends and at school about how she got those bruises and scratches. Everyone knew to tell better than reality actually was. One saw Amy as the biggest liar, while the other believed her.

One said that she had been fighting with another boy, while the other said, but I see her father in the pub every time.

Would he do it? But no, her father was a household name in the city.

Her father was always kind to her so her mother must have done it, right?

Because they never saw her mother in the city or neighborhood, even in the street. So, she had something to hide otherwise we see that woman, right? The only times they saw her mom was in the pharmacy now and then, but what kind of pills does she have? Well, one time she had a Valium pill and the other one Prozac

*but all on doctor's prescription. So, then there is something wrong with that woman and I understand that her husband is so often in the pub.*

For example, the stories about Amy and her parents circulated. And Amy couldn't handle that anymore because of her always arguing parents and the stories that went around like a building on fire. Sometimes it seemed like an entire business building burned down in the millisecond that she was being looked at on the street and she was wearing sunglasses. Amy has often thought about suicide, she had friends,

-but most she knew were enemies and people who didn't care about her. Or people who just don't care what happened to her or her house. No one really knew what she was going through and went through. She wanted to show all people something.

Because all people knew everything about her so well. So, she wanted to take her own life. in a way she thought was cool.

That was through a hose in an exhaust of a car and the windows closed with only the hose inside. But that had to be done in the car of the biggest Threat in her life. Koos just Koos that pervert who must have to get her all along. Who always looked dirty at her as if she was a piece of meat that he was one had a few times in an expensive restaurant and what tasted so good? That dirty man who tried to take her clothes off and rubbed her chest.

That was the biggest pervert in the area. Just Koos, Koossie for his friends, and "*The boogeyman*." for his enemies. Amy was an enemy in the eyes of Koos. She was the one he really wanted to taste, but Amy thought he was a filthy old man... That has made her an enemy in the eyes of Koos. Among other things, his alter ego was "*The*

*boogeyman."* And when he changed into that, his whole attitude turned into a wriggling snake. Even his eyes changed at that point. His eyes turned to shiny beads. She had always been like the glowing death of snakes and rats, but Koos changed into both her fears at the same time. One day her friends asked are you coming tonight? there is a new nightclub in the city. Amy laughs and says doubtfully, "Well, I'm not sure. I have to ask!"

She walks in her house and, her father already looks drunk out of his eyes and her mother is laying with back on the floor her mother already has a thick bloody lip. She asks: "Dad, can I take my friends to town tonight?"

Her father growls a bit and then falls asleep in his armchair. The piss slowly descends and he makes a suffocating sound. She thinks I can I may and I will. *So, she walks out and says to her friends:*

***You can pick me up!*** *Her friends say* We will come to get you at 10:30 pm and we will stay until 2 am or 3 am! At 21:00 her father is still asleep, pulling his eyes and snoring with a choking, suffocating sound. Her mother is also knocked out and lies on the ground a bit trembling and floundering like a fish on dry land. She thinks to herself I finally have a chance to escape from my house. From this hell! She sees her father's bottle of whiskey on the floor and thinks she is emptying that mess quickly. She picks up the bottle and reads the label on the beautiful bottle.

It says Johnny stiller triple black draught she thinks so that's a mouth full and starts to laugh... Ha-ha Johnny what are you quiet.

Well there you go, Johnny, be quiet and she salutes the fallen bottle with the Johnny KIA but when the last drop almost comes out of the bottle, she thinks what does dad like about it? She takes a sip, her head leaves immediately and her throat is on fire.

She runs to the fridge and quickly takes a bottle of cola, she tries to unscrew the cap as quickly as possible, but the bottle is under too much tension and starts to spray. Everything is wet from the cola, she takes a sip from the half-exploded bottle. "Ahh, that's better what does that man like about that stuff?"

Before she leaves, she has to clean this. So, she takes a towel and puts it on it first. And then she gradually sweeps up the sticky mess. That is how it has to be done. She goes back inside and turns on the radio and she hears a nice song. From that unknown artist.

That artist she has always liked but can never come to his name. With the song called: *blood on my knife*.

*No matter if you're a potato peeler. No matter if you're a hunter. There's always going to be blood on your knife sooner or later. No matter what road you're on. No matter what street you're on. No matter what road or street you come from.*

*We all have to face the rules of life. We all have to face the fools in life. Some people beg some people pray. Prayers are for the broken down. You can beg to your god there's always going to be blood. On my knife.*

*You have the evangelist religious and other scum. You have the streetwalker and the nightcrawler. You have the beggar and the priest. You might have god on your side but I know the beast.*

*You know him or you don't. You know him only through stories or you know him well. But everyone knows the lore.*

*Everyone has their own stories to tell and soul to sell. **And everyone goes to the kingdom of hell, where he rules forevermore.***

Then the radio interferes and turns off. It sticks in her head. Especially the phrase *You might have god on your side but I know the beast*. Finally, the number is over, and then there is a knock on the door... And again, and again. Amy does not dare open the door nailed to the floor in fear, she walks to the large solid wooden door. There is knocking again. Terrified, she opens the heavy door. They are her friends. "Oh, how glad I am to see you."

We would pick you up, right? "But it's not 10.30 pm, is it?" her friends say **no** in chorus **we are leaving something. You don't mind that, do you?** Amy smiles and says a bit confused,

"no, that's not bad at all." When they all get on their bikes, Amy asks: "where are we going?" "we're going to a nightclub called **The darkness...**" "Oh great thank you, Bianca!" Bianca laughs "well it shouldn't be a circus though." The other friends laugh in unison. When they arrive in the city, Bianca sees a friend of hers and talks to it. What makes the other girlfriends impatient and keep cycling with the interrogative words **you will catch up with us right?** Amy "yes Bianca will lead me to you."



Bianca rounds off the conversation and kisses the boy. That's how she says we're going there. And gets back on the bike "Amy come on." "Yes, yes Bianca I'm already coming." "Pretty boy, isn't it Amy?"

Amy "yes, where do you know him from?" "Oooh just someone who lives with a friend of my father in the street."

But when they get to **The darkness**, a guy as big as a tree is right there at the front gate. He asks "do you have an ID card with your ladies?" Bianca "no it is still inside I just came from here." The doorman asks Amy, "How old are you, lady?" *Sixteen sir.*

The doorman says in a friendly tone: "you can't go in. Sorry, this is for eighteen years and older!" Bianca gets on the bike and is gone. Amy doesn't know what to do. The doorman "you know what? I'm going to get a drink for you if you stand here ." *Thank you.* The doorman walks in and is back with a bottle of water.

Amy takes the bottle with the words: *sorry sir I didn't know.* "No, I already realized that. Now cycle home and think from now on." Amy gets on the bike and cycles as far away from that place as possible. Until she comes to a dark pub. And someone walks out dashing and tries to shake her hand. She dodges him on the bike but falls.

Her wheel comes off her fork when she hits the curb. She wakes up in a car in the back seat. She knows this car only too well: this is her boogeyman's car. She starts screaming **NO NO NO HELP!** Koos stops the car near a secluded parking lot.

*You can scream what you want no one hears you and I'm just trying to help you.* He gets out of the car and opens her door, pulls her out, and throws her on the floor. He tries to take off her pants. And jokes something.

*What a shitty things these jeans are, well hey well I still have a shitty thing for you...*

Amy punches him scratches him kicks him doing everything she can to get away from him. But Koos is too strong and laughs at her. Then a boy comes by on the bike and does not see them Amy calls **HELP HELP HELP MEEE !!** The bicycle stops but continues to ride when it is quiet. Koos panickily puts his hand in her mouth. His hand is too thick to bite. Especially for 16-year-old Amy. He screams **DON'T TRY ME AGAIN!** and beats her on the head, knocking her out. When she comes to, she sees that there is a brawl going on between Koos and the boy who just passed by. Her jeans are in the bushes next to her and it is wet between her legs.

The boy keeps on going and Koossie stays on the floor while the boy keeps going with his punches and kicks. Then the boy takes a knife it looks like a large dagger.

And walks over to Amy, Amy crawls back and sobs: *no no please don't please don't.* The boy laughs and gives her the dagger "here you know what to do." Amy takes the dagger and walks past the boy. She walks to Koos and says *thank you* to the boy.

She takes off his pants and puts the dagger in the back of his scrotum. Looks at him winks at him "that was definitely a shit thing."

Koos: *no please I beg you no no!*

Then she cuts his ball off in a sawing motion. Koos screams in pain. She asks "Does this hurt Koos?" Then she stabs the dagger in his leg and says "let this be a lesson, even *the boogeyman* can lose his influence. I am no longer afraid!" She jams the dagger in his other leg. The boy walks over to her and asks can I have my dagger back? Amy says I'm almost done insert the dagger in Koos his stomach turns the dagger around pulls it out and gives it back to the boy. "Thank you. I can't thank you enough." The boy "Tell me your name, that's enough thanks." Amy puts on her pants and says "I'm Amy and who are you?" The boy shakes her hand. "Pleasant to meet you, I'm Maikel." She was in love from the very first time she saw Maikel. She knew immediately that she would share her life with him. But what happened then?

In his youth, it is still a mystery to her today. Whenever she brings it up, Maikel changes from a sweet guy to an aggressive man.

A lot has happened, which is why she does not know exactly why he helped her that day. But there are more things she doesn't know about him. So many things have gone unspoken so much that she still wants to ask him. So many questions have remained unanswered.

There is so much that she is sometimes even frightened by her own Maikel.

And that while she knows so much about him but he does not want to let go of that part. It must be something bad she knows for sure. But the more she thinks about it, the more dangerous it becomes for her.

For her, the neighborhood, and the people she hates. It does not go beyond speculation.

Speculating about maybe... No, that's too bad. Then she hears a cry for Amy. When she walks upstairs and he hears teasingly Maikel saying: "Here she comes!" to the tired Justin. She looks a bit cranky around her. The moment she looks into Chantal's room and sees the little lady, she becomes warm inside. A bit of the feeling of the warm stove in the cold winter. She runs into the room. "Oh, girl how beautiful how beautiful you can already stand. how proud I am of you! " She hugs Maikel and says *thank you, Mike*, in a loving tone. When Maikel snarls a bit, "No thanks, I might be even prouder than you..." She just gets grumpier and actually wants to say what it says.

But she doesn't have the energy to bite him off. So, they sit on the couch together and talk a little more. About how proud they are of their little girl. They fall asleep on the couch together. When they wake up, their digital table clock says 06:00 Outside it is dark, and inside it is as usual.

First of all, they walk you upstairs to Chantal's room to see how the little girl is doing.

Chantal wakes up to the sound and seems afraid of her parents. Maikel and Amy don't know what frightened her but she seems terrified of her own parents. Amy bursts into tears and walks downstairs. When she looks at their digital table clock it is still 06:00, she takes her phone and sees that it is 21:00. She does not understand it she calls Maikel who does not understand it herself.

The bell rings Ting thong Ting thong... Amy goes to the door and says with a smile Mike we need a new doorbell as soon as possible.

She opens the door "Hello Tom, what are you bringing here?" Do you want a cup of coffee or tea? He goes inside "yes a cup of coffee will be nice yes." She asks a few times what he has in, milk and sugar is the answer. But she sees something happening in Tom's eyes as if he has a reflection like a dog or something. Well, that will probably just be due to the stress. But then she sees Tom challenging and Maikel getting angry. And angry turns into furious.

She recognizes Maikel's look all too well.

It's the same as it was back then with her boogeyman, and she's afraid things are going wrong in her house and her husband. And Maikel is someone who you don't want to see angry. Nobody wants to see Maikel angry. She fetches Chantal just to be sure. But Maikel miraculously recovers himself. And throws him out in a friendly way. But what Tom says there even goes above her tolerance. She hears Tom say:

I'll take everything from you. I make sure that you slowly deteriorate. And then I'll make sure you get to the bottom, at the bottom like all of us!

She sees that Maikel gets angry and makes a fist. She is holding Chantal's hand but she is squeezing it a little too hard.

Maikel wants to give that old man something to remember. But then Chantal starts to cry. Maikel's fist slackens.

She kisses Chantal and thinks just at the right time thank you...  
Maikel

closes the door and walks to Chantal saying "thank you girl" and plays with his half-year-old daughter. he says again, "Sorry to Chantal." Kisses her and say's "sorry" to Amy again and hugs her.

Amy just laughs

"Mikey, I know you don't have to pretend I know Justin and Francis and it doesn't take long for Chantal to know too. I'm convinced you don't even have to say anything.

Your past is embedded in your face." Amy hugs Maikel and she feels something wet in her neck. Amy can only think thank you, girl, you just saved a life. I think she knows Amy thinks when she sees Chantal laughing. She knows that my girl. That's my smart girl. Amy thinks how smart she is. But what Chantal does she cannot comprehend. As soon as Amy thinks she is smart, Chantal gets up and starts to laugh.

Maikel is holding Amy tight, he does not see it. But Amy understands that something very strange is going on here. The house no longer feels safe and nice either. And the feeling that she is in a nightmare dominates the proud feeling for her little girl. When Amy looks at him, he starts working on the electricity. When he comes down, he says "I've had it for today. I go to bed I think I've had enough excitement."

Amy says reassuringly *well I'm coming right behind you*. When Maikel walks upstairs, she is left behind with Chantal. She looks at Chantal intently at "what else do you know girl?"

Chantal chatted a bit. "Yeah, you will be tired, right? I'm sorry that I'd brought you down girlfriend!" Before bringing Chantal to her crib, she asks her again "do you know what just happened here?" Chantal laughs and grabs her nose in a firm grip. When she brings Chantal upstairs and puts her in the cot. She sees something strange in her room, a bit of a green smoke and there is a strange gasoline-like smell. She asks don't you smell like that girl? Not even your shit smells like that." She normally likes to smell gasoline but a half-year-old baby should not be in that air.

So, she opens a window and when she wants to put Chantal down with her and Maikel. Fades the green smoke and immediately smells as soon as she opens the window. Like a ship that sees the lighthouse after a long sailing.

She smells one more time in Chantal's room but the smell is almost instantaneous gone. Chantal is almost crying but Amy is just in time to hold her and sing a song. She begins to sing:

*I wear the tears of the fallen sun. I wear the tears of the fallen son. I wear the tears of the moon and sky. I wear the tears of the soldier's song. Tears of the fallen.*

Amy asks Chantal what do you have with this song? But she's okay and goes to bed.

Immediately upon entering the bedroom, she sees Maikel sleeping on the right side of the bed.

Not the normal side because normally he sleeps left to keep an eye on the door.

Otherwise, he will not normally fall asleep. She tries to sleep but Maikel keeps her awake with his tumult. When she finally falls asleep after a few hours, she is awakened by a high beep. She looks next to her and Maikel is gone and she hears him stumbling in the landing. She hears them coming out of the wall in her head and hums along a bit. Fifteen seconds later she hears the end of a song that Chantal likes so much nowadays from that unknown artist:

*I hear and see the tears falling every day. An 11-year-old with the newest phone. A grown man yelling to a kid.*

*A skinny woman who is too afraid of what he might say if she eats that ice cream cone. Shit, the world is an ugly place I rest my case.*



*I wear the tears of the fallen sun. I wear the tears of the fallen son. I wear the tears of the moon and sky. I wear the tears of the soldier's song.*

she has had enough she throws the table clock as hard as possible against the wall. That gives a bang like she threw that thing right through the wall. There are pieces of the clock everywhere, she even finds them in her hair.

Then Maikel comes running to her and asks if everything is okay with her.

She can only laugh:

"that was the fact that digital clock made such an unbelievable noise."

She no longer hears what Maikel says. She only hears herself laughing. She doesn't know why but she answers 6:00 am. Maikel's words turn to noise in her much too happy head. She can't think about anything anymore, only to laugh. And the more she wants to stop laughing the more hysterical her smile becomes.

Until it becomes a clinically insane laugh that she can't get out of. At that moment she falls asleep in bed. In her sleep, she gets a retrospective view of the past and sees her father once again drunk yelling at her and her mother.

But this time he mainly looks at her and says "Amy I'm sorry for the life you've had through me." But before she answers, Dad is good,

thank you. Her father takes a bottle of whiskey and hits her mother on the head. Amy wants to hit him with his own bottle of whiskey, but just when she gets the bottle she wakes up. She looks around in confusion and thinks I'm happily at home. When she walks downstairs, she sees Maikel with strange things in his hand, so she asks when he will connect the TV. But Maikel responds in a sultry tone a bit as if he saw the light at once.

And then she sees Maikel's gaze turning into something she really wants to forget. It's the same look Tom had when Maikel threw him out.

## Chapter *III.*

# *The Unannounced Surprise.*

## *Day II.*

When they wake up the next morning, Justin is already in the kitchen.

"Do you know if there is a school nearby?" "Well, I haven't thought about that at all. But when I finish my cup of coffee, we immediately check where it is. The broker said that there were schools nearby and that they offer a good education for a good price."

Amy comes down completely covered in black. And her mascara runs on her under-night bags without sleep.

When Maikel sees her, he knows that something is bothering her below the bone marrow.

But when Maikel asks her what's going on, she laughs "oh that's left over from last night after my clinically crazy laugh." Justin asks: "Mom, dad, and I are going to find a school, and would you like to come too?"

"Go with Daddy boy. I'll stay with Chantal and Francis and we'll try to connect the TV." "yes, that is a job for Francis yes if he learns that a bit, he will benefit from it all his life." Amy looks questionable but knows that Maikel is right so gives a smile and says yes and walks to the basement. In the dark basement, she sees a child sitting in the corner playing with a doll. She says frightened:

*Mikey come and see please tell me if you see the same as I do...*

Maikel is coming and hates it, because what would await him now? He thinks to himself it's going to be a dead rat or something. But when he turns on the light in the basement, he sees a boy with a doll in the corner. As soon as the light goes on, the child starts to sob a little. If Maikel asks where do you live boy?

The boy turns around. Maikel and Amy are terrified by the image they see. The boy is covered in mud and blood. With the doll spasmodically in his hands. They don't understand what the boy is saying, so Maikel walks over to the boy to understand him better.

"Mike please be careful."

"Don't worry I won't hurt him!"

When Maikel approaches, he sees a maimed and mentally broken kid standing in the back corner of the basement. The closer Maikel gets to him, the more firmly and firmly the doll is held. Maikel squats in front of the child and first says "what a beautiful doll you have!" The boy puts a smile from ear to ear on his face. His face is so maimed that his teeth are visible in his cheeks when he smiles. Maikel gets upset about it but don't let the little man know. "Where are you from?" The child opens his mouth and Maikel sees that his tongue has been pulled out of his mouth. Maikel only gets angrier and angrier but keeps his calm towards the child. He asks in a soft tone: *Can I hold your doll for a moment?* Whereupon the child gives the doll to Maikel and hugs Maikel.

When Maikel looks at the doll he sees that the head is dented and the lips and eyes of the doll have been sewn shut.

Maikel asks: *would you like to have a doll or something else from us?*

To which the child shakes manically no. Maikel says *don't worry, nothing will happen to you.* The child forces a convulsive smile, but everything shows that the child does not trust it. Maikel holds out his hand and says *please come along.*

The child frightened gives Maikel a trembling hand and walks up the stairs of the basement. But as soon as the cellar door opens and the hallway light shines in his face, he lets go of Maikel's hand and runs down the stairs like a madman. Amy: *Come on we won't hurt you.* Justin hears him running down the stairs and goes to watch. Maikel sees Justin standing there and says "Just no man." But Justin says stubborn "I will help." He picks up his favorite action figure. *A werewolf to help you in a dark time,* he says to the child. The child takes the werewolf and immediately plays with it. But when Justin walks back upstairs, the boy runs after Justin and almost pulls him off the basement stairs by his vest. Justin asks "Should I stay with you?"

Whereupon the boy makes a writing motion. **Dad get pen and paper. He wants to tell us something.**

When Maikel walks into the hall, the boy makes a silent movement. With his finger in front of his mouth. Justin reassures him

When Maikel gives him the pen and the paper, he actually starts writing right away.

He writes in a difficult handwriting but they can read it well. He only writes his name on the entire piece of paper. It says judas.

Maikel really has to do his best not to freak out. His father called him that too. Especially when he tried to explain something to his father, he was called judas. He especially thinks of this little man, which he has all experienced. And he thinks of his own childhood that pales with this one. What has this boy seen? He asks to himself. Who is that heartless eater who did this? The boy looks at Maikel and gives a wink when the boy closes his right eyelid, Maikel sees that something is written. He asks the boy "will you do that again for me?"

While the boy closes his eyelid a second time, Maikel sees a word: **Betrayal.**

The word is cut into it, the boy starts to write again, he writes the word: Pope on the back of the sheet of paper. He writes this once and starts to tremble with fear. He tries to say something but it is not understood. Then the boy starts to shake his head in fear. As if he wants to say not to interfere for fear of worse.

But it is too late for Maikel. Maikel tries to get out of the basement in anger. But the boy holds him tightly to his leg. While Maikel walks up the basement stairs, he accidentally hurts the boy. Who falls with his head against a staircase.

Maikel immediately calms down and tries to keep the boy upright. There is no movement in the boy.

Maikel bursts into tears and says hysterically *I'm sorry I'm sorry I'm sorry*. Until Justin says "Dad there is nothing wrong with Judas."

Maikel tries his best not to get mad. But the using word judas as a name gets him there. **Stop saying Judas this boy deserves more than that name. In any case! He does not know our respect and compassion. As a matter of fact, he never loses that name or his scars in his entire life.** Maikel shows his lower back "look kid I have this. Maybe nothing compared to this boy, but I also have scars from that name." Justin looks at his father's lower back and sees his grandfather's scars in it.

Maikel's back looks like a roadmap with so many scars from his father's dagger.

*I did not tell anyone, but I owe these scars to my father. Maybe this boy too. But in the end, I stood up for myself against my greatest fear, my father. He was not a believer at all, my mother was. And that's why he had to have me every day. If I didn't get hit by that guy, he would take something else to hurt me with. One day he grabbed a dagger and cut me with it. I cried but he didn't stop.*

*I begged him but he laughed at it. So, at some point after a few times, I grabbed his dagger under his pillow.*

*And I did the same thing he did to me. Namely tied him to his stomach on the bars of his bed. And I started to cut him as he did me identical*

*even. But what happened to me in nine times, I did to him in one go. When the bed was red with thick blood and blood dripped through the bed onto the carpet. I continued stabbing and cutting. Until I was sure he could never hurt me again. When my father was dead after begging like a child who knew he was going to die. I walked down and watched a movie. Before I grabbed my meager belongings and walked out the door ended with a sense of satisfaction. I have a lot of things left over to him but only one materialistic thing. The rest is my rotten memories. The dagger I met your mother with for the very first time. That was a few days after I let my own father suffer until he couldn't let anyone else suffer.*

Amy says thank you Mike and Justin understand his father. This could have turned out very differently, he thinks to himself.

At that moment the boy comes back to his senses and immediately gives Maikel a hug. If Maikel bends over to hold the boy well and whispers in his ear: *do you want to stay here for a few days?* He hears something whispering in his ear with a heavy dark voice. ***You will never get rid of me Judass.*** Maikel closes his eyes and thinks **bring it on.**

Maikel asks Justin

“Will you try to make it clear to him that we are not a threat?” “Okay dad but we need a name for him first.” Maikel thinks and comes up with the name Bud. Justin “from now on your name is **Bud.**” The boy starts jumping happily and then walks out of the basement. When Justin walks upstairs to bring Francis the news and Amy goes



shopping. Maikel goes looking for Bud in the living room. He finds Bud while connecting the TV alone. He laughs and asks you can't wait, can you? Now go-ahead man. Maikel sits down on the couch and watches Bud connect the TV and the DVD player. Bud looks at the front window, but it is the blue skink that interests him. Maikel smiles and says: yes, that is **Blue** our blue-tongued skink. It's like a snake on legs, isn't it? Bud smiles and his teeth are visible through his cheeks again. Bud walks over to Blue and knocks on the window. Maikel laughs when Blue is coming and Bud is startled. He says you don't have to be afraid. Blue is tame, Maikel takes Blue out and lays him gently on the neck of the frightened Bud. Blue smells him by licking his face with his blue tongue. But Bud doesn't really like that and starts to sob a bit. Maikel says quietly: *But boy Blue doesn't hurt you.* Bud strokes Blue's head with his fingers and Blue starts to find his place in Bud's neck. Bud smiles and installs the TV with Blue stuck on his neck.

Justin calls down **its good guys!** Francis comes curiously down the stairs. Bud turns on the TV exactly when Francis comes down. Francis says with a smile "not even a day in and already knows how to win my confidence. Ha-ha great man thank you." Francis walks over to Bud and introduces himself: *Hi I am Francis and you?*

Just when Bud shakes his hand, an advertisement of a movie with a dog passes by: **Man's best buddy!** And Bud points to the screen. *Oh, okay hello buddy I hope you have a good time.*

After that comes an ad of a toy with the text: **With your new buddy you will have the time of your life!** Francis watches TV and

scratches his ears. When Bud sets up another channel, he hears:  
**Now that our new puzzle book has become even more difficult, are you smart enough to connect the dots?**

Bud looks at Francis and gives Francis a smile from ear to ear. At that moment Francis says "Sorry Dad I'm going upstairs again." He walks to the stairs. He looks back again and sees Bud standing a hair's length away. He is startled and runs to his room. Maikel: *Oh, let him but he will get used to you.* Bud nods and repositions the armchairs and the table. Then he walks to the kitchen and takes the meat hook from Maikel's private stuff box. He hangs the meat hook on the heating tube at the front door.

Maikel: "I hadn't thought of that yet thank you, buddy!" Bud nods and continues to move the rest of the stuff. If Maikel sits on the chair just moved with the best view on the TV and a little zap he gets a call from the TV through zapping: **What...** meaning... **of... life?** Maikel says "yes I sometimes wonder" to the TV. He thinks to himself hey das quite nice and tries again: Nobody... **knows the...** reason for... *living*. He turns off the TV because he has to find a school for Justin and it is already 12:19 so, he has to hurry. He calls Justin and walks to his room.

Justin come on kid we still have to drive. Justin arrives a bit reluctantly but he understands his father very well.

Maikel asks Bud we're going to leave you alone with Francis and Blue but Amy will be back from shopping for groceries, is that ok? Bud nods and sits down on the couch. Playing with Blue. Justin puts

on his coat and says thank you, Dad. Maikel replied as they walked to the car: **No thanks** school is important. I wish Francis felt the same way. Could you persuade him to accept school?

When they are in the car, Maikel and Justin discuss which type of school would suit him best.

"Well, that's the school with the most choices to follow courses and get diplomas."

"Shall we try this first?" Justin scratches his ear and says "Well why not." They walk in and are actually immediately sent out again with the words *we have just moved here*. When they are three schools further and it happens again, Maikel is no longer so friendly and says shaking hands: **Yes, we have just moved here!** He squeezes the director's hand.

The director: *sir we do not tolerate the aggressive behavior of a murderer here.*

Then Maikel must pull out all the stops to avoid pushing the little pencil-like thin director with his head through the electric sharpener on the table. To see if he can come out even thinner and smaller than it already is.

He squeezes the director's hand even harder. Until at some point, he squeezes too hard out of anger and he feels something snap in his hand. The director screams out in pain, but that screaming kitchen maid turns his hard grip into a clamp that a pit bull has in its mouth.

**If you don't allow my son or find a school that can, then I'll separate this measly little hand from the rest of your body.** And says with a smile to Justin: *Yes, we all had to learn how to recycle.*

The director faints in pain and finally no longer screams. Maikel's clamp is loosening gradually *I'm afraid it won't work out today boy.*

"Dad I'm glad I'm not admitted to this school."

Maikel asks are there not enough courses to follow? Justin says in a cheerful tone when I follow an education here then I am also in the creases... Maikel tries to hold back his smile, to come across respectfully to that little ugly little man out there on his office chair with drool dripping out his mouth... But the more he looks at that screaming kitchen maid the more the corners of his mouth starting to leave for a small smile. Just, let's go home. But we now have a small problem, because we have had all four schools nearby without any success. Justin laughs and says:

*Yes, that will be left for another year. And now we're done our best let's go to mom.*

Maikel says oh right Aims completely forgotten and calls her.

The phone rings three times before Amy picks up with the cautious words, "Sorry Mike, it takes me so long to get home, but I ran into Tom at the grocery store and he held me up a bit." At the word Tom, Maikel's neck hair stands up and asks in a calm understanding tone: *Did it take you three hours?* Tom is not an evil man Mike.

**Aims if you didn't invite him home then it's okay.** *I don't remember Mike what just happened? I don't know that, honey. But I like it all. We haven't been able to find a school that Just belongs to. Or even a school that wants to have a murderer's son.* Amy laughs just as hysterically as she did that night in their house that first night.

Whereupon Maikel hangs up the phone down and says: *I don't feel like it right now. Come on Just let's go home. Francis is alone with Bud and I don't trust that.* Justin gets into the car and says: "Well, Dad too bad it didn't work out. But then again, I don't have to be afraid of bad grades." Maikel tries to start the car on which the car does not start up to three times and then he gets out and says just let's go.

Justin looks fascinated at a old mansion. And sees an old man standing there, a bald little old man. Justin says hello to the older man but no response comes back. When Justin walks on, the man comes after him in a strange walk as if he had been shot in both legs or something. When the man stumbles closer and Justin keeps walking faster and looks back more afraid. Maikel stops the man and asks what's wrong sir? The man gives a strange answer:

***The further people walk, the further they get from their destination.***

When Maikel looks questionable, the man asks: "Did you come to live with Tom in the street?" "Yes, house 99." The man shakes hands with Maikel. "Koos pleasantly."

Maikel looks at Koos as if he knows him from something, but Koos immediately breaks that thought with the words: *I am a good acquaintance of Tom. And I think we know each other from somewhere?*

Koos pulls up his blouse and says again: *I think we know each other.* Maikel sees the big scar and asks Justin "You know how to get home, right?" Justin looks back "Yes Dad" and continues walking. When Maikel is alone with him, he says "The man who was affected had deserved it."

Koos shakes hands with Maikel. *I certainly did. I saw the light shortly afterward.* And I never hurt anyone who didn't deserve it. *"That's good and remember what's good and bad before you take away a person's innocence again."*

*That will never happen again believe me but I have learned from it.*

*I now give occasional lectures in schools and try to keep the youth in the local church to make the same mistake as me.*

Maikel just looks at him and Koos is already shaking. When Koos starts to recover, he asks: *how is Amy?*

But as soon as Koos has said Amy, he has already received a blow from Maikel. The first one on his sleep, the second on his nose, and the third on his jaw. It went so fast that Koos starts to see pixels from the speed of the blows. He says *I forgive you, Mike.* Maikel has to leave now before he keeps hitting the guy, just like before, and leaves Koos there. He has to look for Justin.

Maikel runs like a mad bull looking for his son. When he sees Justin then sitting on a curb not far from the rapist's lament.

He sits down next to him "boy we have to go home now..." When Justin looks at him with his eyes rolled back and asks *Who was that scary man dad?* Maikel

"An acquaintance of mom and me. Please don't say anything to Mommy," says Maikel, questioningly.

When he sees his son's eyes, his anger turns into anxiety and his concern turns into pure fear.

He hugs Justin and whispers softly and fearfully: *Boy everything will be alright I love you, and mom too.* When Maikel kisses him on the forehead, he sees his white eyes change back to their normal brown color. And if Maikel wants to say come boy lets go he gets a call.

When he picks up, he hears: **Mike Mike come home please come home...** Maikel "Yes Aims we will get there as soon as possible. The car was difficult, but we are nearby. " **You have to come because...** At that moment he hears a beep.

When he calls back, no more is picked up and after 4 tries he hears the person who is calling you cannot pick up at the moment. He grabs Justin by the arm pulls him up **Boy we have to run the last few hundred meters. But we have to go home now.**

# *Chapter IV.*

## *The Nightmares.*



Maikel starts to run and Justin follows. When Justin calls out **DAD CALM!** Turns the frightened Maikel into an aggressive man. **JUST GO ON NOW BOY, OTHERWISE I WILL MAKE YOU RUN!** Justin continues running, he sprains his ankle and limps forward. He no longer dares to call his father and sees how he disappears through the streets of the neighborhood. Justin knows where to go because he saw this from the car. When he arrives at his house, he sees that there are dozens of crows waiting for him. They sit all over the lawn in the front yard, on the roof, and even on his mother's car. When he rings the bell, his father opens the door and gives him a hug with the words: Sorry boy I was not myself for a while. Justin asks: "Dad where do those crows come from?" Then Maikel's phone rings again when Maikel picks up and asks: "Where are you woman?"

He hears her in a soft scared voice *help me Mike.*

"where are you can you see something that can lead me to you?" Then the soft voice changes into a scream. He gets to hear a single word, namely

## **playground.**

After that it is quiet. Maikel is still trying to ask which playground? But the phone is hung up less than three seconds later, Maikel receives a call from an unknown number. When he picks up, he hears a heavy voice whispering

***Petting zoo.***

After that he hangs up. When Maikel says to Justin, "Just go in and open the door only to Mom or me!" Then Maikel gets a phone call from the unknown number again when he picks up, he hears a heavy voice whisper again: ***Where are you, Mike?*** When Maikel closes the door behind him. He asks on foot to the petting zoo "who are you?"

The heavy voice answers:

***The one who comes into your dreams when the light comes on. And the one that wakes you up when the light goes out.***

Maikel says what is that in this hole with all those riddles and Maikel gets angry again. Then he hears the heavy voice whispering ***Well done Mike being calm is not good for you. Anger that's good for you.*** Maikel says you don't know anything yet and grabs his inner pocket. Then the connection is broken. When he arrives at the petting zoo, he sees crows everywhere and hears heavy barking. The barking keeps getting closer. Until he hears a dog panting behind him.

As he looks behind him, he sees nothing but crows following him with their head. He now hears the barking again, but this time the barking is more intense. As if an invisible dog guards the site here. When Maikel walks into the petting zoo, the crows fly away at the same time. And he only hears the dog paws walking behind him at

an accelerating pace. When Maikel looks back when the dog has to stand directly behind him, he sees a crow flying at him.

But before the crow hits him, the crow flies up and is gone in the dark evening. When Maikel starts looking for Amy at the large playground attached to the petting zoo, he hears the same dog growling at the slide. And only at the big slide. The damn staircase is nearly endless. When he is finally upstairs, he sees a long-haired child.

When he asks if she has seen a woman when the child turns around, he sees that the child has burns all over her face.

When the child walks up to him and tries to warn him about the guardian of this petting zoo, the child is pushed aside by the large Doberman. He pushes her off the side of the slide, which is far too high. Maikel sees the child fall six meters down. And before the big Doberman can bite him, he grabs his inner pocket again and takes out his father's dagger.

When the dog sees its reflection in the shiny knife, it disappears like smoke out of an ashtray. Maikel looks around for that big beast but doesn't see him anywhere. And even the child at the bottom of the slide is gone.

When he stays frozen on top of that big slide, he hears Amy sob. So, he slides down and sees his wife sitting at the bottom of the slide with her hands in her hair screaming go away. When Maikel puts his hand on her shoulder and says it's good Aims. She turns quickly and says reproachfully if you hadn't thrown Tom out, all this would

never have happened! Shortly afterward she goes into shock and can only say:

*Never happened, never happened, never happened!*

If he wants to take Amy home, she says I'll stay here it's safer than home.

*Never happened, never happened!*

Here I am guarded by a dog. I know you heard him too. I don't have that at home!

*Never happened!*

Amy starts pulling her hair out of her head.

*Never happened never happened never happened never happened never happened never happened never happened never happened!*

Maikel is tired of it and just like he slaps her in the face and says go out normally. The phone rings Maikel picks up and he says **yes now what?**

he hears Justin sobbing: *Is everything okay with mom?* Maikel: "I don't really know what to say boy."

Justin: "I don't dare to ask this very well now, but it is now 5:45 PM should we cook tonight?" Maikel: "I would like that, but I can also

order something Just” Then Amy runs off looking for the dog and calling him. *Pst pst pst come, boy, pst pst pst pst.* She pats her pants.

Then the Doberman walks over and walks out of the petting zoo with Amy. Maikel: "Just, boy, I think you are in for a surprise!" He hangs up. If he takes Amy's hand and asks: do you know what you're doing? Amy looks at him with glowing yellow eyes. He feels as if he is looking into an open flame. Such a nice warm feeling and he says okay Aims if you are sure. When they walk into the neighborhood together with the Dobermann, the Dobermann stops opposite number 67 and starts to growl and bark. Maikel tries to calm the dog down but he fails. Until Amy says come on boy come on. The Doberman looks at her and listens to her. When the Doberman arrives at their house number 99, he lays at the door and gives Amy a lick. When Maikel comes to the door, he stands upright against Maikel's chest. He is not allowed to enter. Until Amy says:

*He may enter Kerber!*

Then he lets Maikel through.

Maikel asks Amy Kerber? Amy answers the best watchdog you can find, shortly for Kerberos. Maikel doesn't dare to say much anymore, so *yeah, why not...*

When they come in, Amy smells that diner is ready and she sees that the table has been set and he asks the boys: What do we eat? Justin and Francis say we don't know yet Bud is cooking.

The TV turns on and they hear a cooking program that says: *The food is ready. Chow time!* Then Bud comes in with the pans. Maikel: "Thank you boy, it smells nice!" Then he hears the TV say: *I hope it tastes well.* Maikel smiles and says oh, but what is it? He hears the TV saying Dutch pot ala minute.

He sits down at the table and says thank you again, Bud. Bud also sits down with a special spot for Blue at the table. He plays with Blue while eating his mash. He looks at Maikel asking Maikel: "Try it buddy, maybe Blue likes it. That beast eats everything. " Then they hear the same ad again:

**with your new buddy, you will have the time of your life.**

Maikel: "I believe so too." Bud laughs and feeds Blue. Maikel: "We also have a surprise for you, but watch out with Chantal!" Justin and Francis ask together: Oh, what is it? "After dinner, look outside at the front door. Bud, it is wonderful man. Even Chantal likes it."

Bud laughs and they hear on TV: thank you very much... for the compliments... **I am happy**... that...it tastes... **thanks again.** When they have eaten, Maikel walks over to Bud in the kitchen and helps him with the dishes. "Kid I had no idea you could do this. How old are you?"

Bud takes a pen and paper from the room and writes 7. Maikel asks again, "Who did this to you man?" Bud with the pen and paper still in his hand writes on **Pope**. Maikel: "Who is that Pope?" Bud writes down **No no no no**. Maikel sees Bud getting scared. "Okay, you will say so." Bud writes down when everything comes to an end

everyone walks away. Maikel says with a laugh: "Then you don't know us yet." Just then, Kerber starts howling at the front door. Justin asks: **What do I hear now, a howling hound?**

He walks out. When he opens the front door, Kerberos runs inside. Justin doesn't know what to do and looks desperately at the big dog panting right in front of him. He softly says *Dad Dad help*. When Amy walks over to Kerber and says sit boy quietly! When Kerber sits down, he sees Blue. He walks to the terrarium and puts his head through the glass open window, the glass breaks when Kerberos pulls his head out of the terrarium with blue between his teeth. The glass is spread throughout the living room. Chantal starts screaming from the dining table. He turns around with Blue's tail wobbling out of his mouth. Bud shakes his head Frantically. Kerber looks at Bud swallows Blue and then he sees Chantal.

He spins around the screaming baby until he growls with his paws on the table opposite Chantal. Bud gets Maikel from the kitchen.

His anger takes over when he sees Kerber standing there growling and drooling. He takes a kitchen knife and just before Kerber wants to strike, he cuts Kerberos throat. But Kerberos does not dazzle or blush and continues to growl at the frightened Chantal. Maikel stabs him in the neck but still the dog growls and growls. Maikel stabs wherever he can and just when Kerberos wants to bite, he falls with his head on the table. Maikel continues to stab and says that thing is not dead yet,

**HE IS NOT DEAD YET! DEMONIC FREAKING DOG!**

Not a drop of blood comes out of Kerberos injuries. Some sort of black stuff comes out. And it turns into a coffee-like substance before it disappears completely. Maikel Justin and Francis look astonished as the great Dobermann melts into the ground. Amy just says **Mike what are you doing now? WHAT ARE YOU DESTROYING NOW?** Maikel can only say Chantal Aims Chantal. Amy shrugs and walks away. When she walks out the door she comes to her senses in the front yard and walks back in with the words sorry Mike you're right. I don't know what happened to me.

Maikel comforts Chantal, holding her and sings:

*I wear the tears of the fallen sun. I wear the tears of the fallen son. I wear the tears of the moon and sky. I wear the tears of the soldier's song. Tears of the fallen.*

Chantal sobs a little and starts chuckling again until the grin turns into a big laugh. Maikel puts her down on the floor and she starts shaking her ass and dancing.

Maikel: "Oh do you want to hear the song?" He turns it on on his phone. Chantal goes wild when hearing the song and Justin and Francis hold her hands. But she wants to do it herself.

"Aims look, look." Amy can only say: "Yes, she has the age for that."

Maikel asks in surprise: "At six months and a couple of days?" Amy: "Some kids are there earlier." Maikel on one angry tone: **Act normal.** Amy looks at Maikel with glowing green eyes and says in a shrill scream: **I am acting normal pansy!** Maikel sits down and



says: **If you don't get your act together now, I will throw you out of my house with skin and bone! Be proud of your daughter! The glass is everywhere and Blue is dead, you can be proud of your daughter.** Amy just looks at Maikel and smiles.

Then he hears the heavy voice in his head whispering again: ***All right Mike get angry. well done Mikey just gets angry. Mikey Mike that's good for you.***

He now knows a crucial thing. He must remain calm at all costs: he must remain calm. When Amy walks to the front door a second time and puts on her coat. Maikel comes after her and asks: "Where are we planning to go?" Amy "To my parents or something Mike I need help!"

Maikel: "How long has it been since you've seen your parents?"

Amy: "Justin's birth." Maikel: "Aims that's twelve and a half years old ago." Amy: "Mike, I don't care. I need help. Can't I go to your parents or something. "

"I don't know if my mother is still alive, and you now know my father's story too." Amy swallows and asks: *Do you remember anyone?* Maikel: Yes, a pastor. But that's not a good idea, although he's the only one who can heal you. But for him, everyone is possessed or evil. He goes so far into exorcism that you go through a living hell, even though you are healthy. He is so captivated by the evil that he himself is what he hates most in this world... Amy takes her car keys and says: Maybe that's better.

Okay but then we all go together, we don't leave anyone behind, not even Bud. When they walk out of the house with six of them, Maikel sees a blackish stuff dripping down the walls while he takes Chantal. A head can be seen a large dog head. When Maikel runs to the car, he says to Amy floor it!

Amy takes a look back but sees nothing while Maikel sees a big black shadow wolf running after them. Chantal says: **Nilai Lobo!** Maikel asks: "What do you say girl what is that?" Chantal says **Lobo** again! When Maikel looks back he sees a blue and a purple light getting closer and closer until they almost look like eyes. Chantal claps her hands and says: **Lobo!** Now Justin and Francis say it too. Chantal is calmly playing with her seat belt. Until the wolf walks next to the car and enters. Paralyzed with fear in the backseat of the family car, Maikel sees the lights forming in Chantal's eyes. A blue and a purple eye Chantal quickly turns her neck around and looks at Maikel. Paralyzed with fear, Maikel sees the shadow come to him. The shadow seems to smell Justin and Francis, both of whom point to Maikel with a blue and purple eye. The shadow only leaves Amy alone when he flies over to Maikel.

Maikel, still paralyzed, tries to escape the shadow. But the shadow eats him whole until there is nothing but black on his body.

His brown eyes turn gray and his hair is long again as he had long ago. The shadow speaks to him in his mother's voice. He hears his mother's voice in his head. He hears his mother say:

*Evil is everywhere in this world, look at your father and judge for yourself.*

Yes, ma I know that now he has had his earned wages, right?

*I didn't mean it that way boy. The more people you judge the more you judge yourself.*

What am I supposed to do?

*find it in your heart to forgive people remember that you are an instrument of god Alikey.*

When Maikel answers angrily: **God has forgotten me a long time ago!**

The shade shows something different. The moment Amy let Tom in and while Tom hangs up his coat throws something in the corner under the coat rack. A black thick coffee-like creature the length of a snake and the body of a parasite. What crawls into the wall of his house?

Then the shadow is gone and Maikel wakes up on the side of the road with Amy on top of him.

**Mike, you were dead for a while. Your heart stopped for a while or something. Your eyes were bloodshot and foamy stuff came out of your mouth. Mikey, we were shocked.**

Maikel has to deal with this in his much too busy head. Then he sees that the wolf is walking away from the shadow and first looks at him in the dark evening. He bows his head with the words *thank you!*

The wolf disappears. Amy panics and asks: **What happened?**

Maikel: "I think I had a visitor."

When Amy sees Chantal and Justin talking and Chantal starts to get busy, she says: "I think Tallie has to poop. But I'm glad it's all right now Mike. You're sure it's all right now?"

Maikel: "You are a sweetheart, but it's all good!"

He gets in the car. When Chantal grabs Maikel and says: **Daddy lobo!** Justin translate it to Maikel Lobo means wolf. Maikel: "Could she see him then?" Justin: "Bud Francis and I saw him too. He crawled into you or something."

Maikel: "Yes I know. He showed me something." Chantal says: **NOT HE, SHE!**

Maikel asks Amy: Do you hear Chantal talking too? Amy: "Yes I hear it too yes I am a very proud mom." Maikel hugs Chantal. Chantal says in Maikel's ear: *Nilai proud, mom proud!* Amy: "Mike, we're going home again." She turns the car around. "This is all the help I wanted and more." When the big family car gets to the part where the wolf entered the car, the radio skips. In a kind of preaching pastor who talks about evil. Amy: "I don't want to hear this, but I

can't get the channel on anything else. Sorry guys here you got to do it. "

Maikel: "I am curious what he is talking about." Amy: Are you sure?  
Maikel: "Yes, I am curious about his say."

So, Amy turns up the radio and jokes, "I think this button is the only one that works."

The preacher talks about the manipulative people in this world and compares them to the famous snake. The pastor says: among other things:

**To stop the manipulative snake, cut off his head.**

Amy: Mike this is nothing for the kids, is it? Bud flinches at every word the preacher says at the high volume. Until Bud starts screaming **Judas Judas** and screaming turned into screaming **JUDAS JUDASS**. Amy lowers the volume to the point where no sound is heard from the radio. She asks: "Mike how is this possible?"

Maikel: "I don't know Aims his tongue is still gone just look." Bud begins to point to Maikel and says in a shrill screaming voice:

**You will never put me in a corner again, you will never humiliate me again, you will never lie to me again, you will never hit me again, you will never put me in a corner again, you will never humiliate me again,**

you will never lie to me again, you will never hit me again, you will never  
lie to me again..

you will never lie to me again...

*you will never cut me again Judas!*

*Judas, Juda Juda Judas!*

His finger slacks Bud is startled by his own behavior and words and writes on sorry Mike and the radio works again at the highest volume.

*I'm sorry. I'm so sorry. Sorry for everything I've done.*

Maikel says: "It's okay kiddo!" He no longer believes his own eyes and ears. Then the radio switches on out of nowhere and they hear **EVERYONE GOES TO THE KINGDOM OF HELL!** They are all terrified, especially Chantal who starts to cry from the shock. Maikel: "Calm down, girl, we've hurt Bud's feelings and he's expressing himself like this." Then the volume goes down and they hear quietly in the background. *Where he rules forevermore.* shortly afterward they hear the song Maikel sang for Chantal: *I wear the tears of the fallen sun. I wear the tears of the fallen son.*

*I wear the tears of the moon and sky. I wear the tears of the soldier's song. Tears of the fallen.*

Chantal starts laughing again. Maikel: "Thank you buddy!" Bud sticks out thumb up and writes on a piece of paper **sorry dad**. Bud writes on **sorry brothers** and kisses Chantal on the forehead.

Chantal grabs his nose and plays with it. When they arrive at their house, they see crows all over and around the house in the pitch darkness of the evening, and Justin asks *Where do those beasts come from?*

*Crows are not doomed, boy if you see a lot of crows somewhere, that does not mean that someone dies or something. It may be that those crows have their own funerals.*

*So that means they all come together when a fellow crow dies.. Look, they are also in the trees and not only on our house. You can always assume the worst but crows are actually animals with a lot of respect towards each other and the friends or family members they have lost. If only people were like a crow.*

When Maikel walks out of the car to their house to prove that the crows are harmless, a raven gets on his shoulder, Maikel walks back to the car and calls Justin to him. Justin gets out of the car and stays away from Maikel. But the raven immediately flies to Justin's shoulder and shouts in his ear. Justin does not know how to give a posture. Maikel comes to Justin and says: *look boy now you have a raven on your shoulder.*

*That's from origin a meat eater but he does nothing to you why do you think that is? Because a crow and a rook and even a raven are respectful beasts, Just.*

He says to the rest: **Get out of the car.** Amy gets out of the car first and the crows start to warn each other a bit. Francis comes out of the car with Chantal and the beasts do nothing, not even a little squeak comes from the hundreds of crow's ravens and rooks. Then Bud gets out of the car and the screams for help from the animals go through the bone. Bud remains scared and Maikel asks him:

*Buddy, they are more afraid of you than you of them how is that possible? It doesn't have to mean when you see these beasts that someone is dying. But with your eruption in the car, I'm not sure boy. Not to nag, but you speak without a tongue. that's not normal kiddo maybe these beasts are trying to warn us for you. For you and the evil in the world, beasts like crows don't just attack, only if the threat is too bad. And as you can see, they are not attacking you yet, but how long before they do attack you?*

Bud looks around and walks back to the car. When the raven moves from Justin's shoulder to Maikel's, Maikel knows Bud can get out of the car and calls him. With the words: **Come on they have accepted you.** When the car door opens and Bud comes out scared. The crows are silent and the raven on Maikel's shoulder flies to the nearby tree. When Maikel enters and asks Bud, "Are you going to explain how to speak without a tongue?" Bud looks the other way. The side of the coat rack. Maikel:

"Do you know what lies there, boy?" Bud shakes no and the shaking gets heavier and heavier. Maikel:



*I think you know boy. I think you know what animal that was buddy. But would you also tell me then buddy.* Bud shakes his head violently and his eyes roll back Maikel sees only the whites of his eyes.

Until the white on his left eye starts to turn black, the parasite emerges and the head is visible. *We're going to help you buddy? Yes, there comes that dirty black beast!* He pulls the parasite further out of the left eye. When he pulls on the parasite that thing gets longer and longer, he says: ***I help you buddy I help you.*** Bud cries out. Then the TV switches on again and Maikel receives:

**Thou shalt not conquer pagan. Thou shalt not lie serpent. To stop the manipulative serpent cut of the head.**

When Maikel has almost pulled the parasite out of Bud's eye, the parasite bursts in half. And he sees the bottom of that black thing crawling down again. He says: *That's how we do it. Sorry buddy but that's that.* Bud is still screaming until he gets a blue and purple eye and shows Maikel something. He sees that there are more black parasites like this. they nest in the walls from bottom to top. And top to bottom and in between their entire walls are black on the inside. Then Bud shows him some more Bud shows what has been done to him and where it happened. The basement of a church with some other children. And more importantly by whom. But Bud stops when the person's face becomes visible. Amy says:

"Mike, I'm changing Chantal's diaper." Then he wakes up in his bed and looks at his watch.

His watch shows 05.40. And the streets are still dark when Maikel looks out his window. When he asks Amy what happened, Amy says: "Oh Mike, go back to sleep." So Maikel lies down in the much too big bed again turns around. When Maikel is about to fall asleep and he feels the room spinning around him. He hears the front door open and close. When he tries to wake Amy up, she sleeps through so Maikel goes looking for it. He takes his father's dagger from under his pillow and explores the house. Nothing to see and Justin Francis Chantal and Bud are sleeping. So, he walks down when he gets to the front door and opens for Maikel. But Maikel closes the door when he is outside. The door falls in the lock. He rings the doorbell no answer, he knocks no answer. Out of anger and a bit desperation he kicks the door in and walks in but it is not his house. He hears children laughing and playing. He hears a dog barking. And some weird sound coming from an organ or something. He doesn't understand it and looks around. His house has been turned into a church. And the sounds come from the ground. If he decides to walk through the church and find out where he is now. He hears a child giggling behind him. When he looks back, the giggling child is gone. He hears someone say in a heavy demonic voice:

**All steps you take in this church affect you. This is not a hallowed ground.**

Maikel sees a large altar full of cobblestones, it seems.

When Maikel turns left behind the large altar, he comes across a door that leads to the basement. He goes down the stairs and finds all the chained children on the walls of the large pitch-black

basement that runs under the entire church. He tries to untie them all but it doesn't work without the keys.

When he hears someone walking down the stairs with heavy footsteps and lots of keys, he only thinks about one thing.

And that thing is: I must have those keys. When the person is down and turns on the light, Maikel immediately attacks him and tries to get the keys. The man is heavy and wears an expressionless black mask. He struggles to get the man to the ground and the struggle continues when he to take the keys from the man's pocket. When he finally takes the keys. A barking dog approaches him with drool in his shiny mouth. He has to work to ground the man, the man whistles and the dog walks towards them. The man says **Lobooo**, and disappears. Maikel tries to free the children but he does not succeed. Under the threat of the barking angry dog now walking towards him with blood-red teeth and eyes as if purgatory was burning in him. All children shout in chorus **Maikel Maikel wake up**.

When Maikel wakes up, Bud stands at his bedside looking at him and he is startled. Then Bud taps his wrist and when Maikel looks at his watch, the digital watch flashes 06:00. Maikel immediately feels under his pillow and his dagger is still there.

### *Day III.*

When Bud walks out of the bedroom, Maikel sees that Bud has more scars under his feet. And it looks like burns. Just like Maikel's

father did to him at the time. Maikel can only think about that, that idiot still haunted me. And he stops Bud. When he touches Bud, Bud immediately turns around. He opens his mouth and tries to say something. Maikel sees his tongue grow back and when Bud says the first word Maikel gets cold, cold to the bone, and even down there. The word Bud pronounces is **antichrist** and points to Maikel. He doesn't dare to think that Bud has the same voice as his father. Bud laughs and walks away. When Bud walks away, the footsteps are nothing like a normal seven-year-old boy, but more like a goat or ram. when Bud looks back for the last time, Maikel sees that he has got the eyes of a goat. So yellow with a bar across the middle. He hears his grandfather's clock. He knows very well how that thing sounded. He used to be terrified there for those heavy banging of the heavy timepiece.

He hears that thing strike six times and every time he gets more frightened. If he wants to hit Bud, he finds himself in bed. And he wakes up slowly and confused with Bud at his bedside. As soon as he sees Bud, he takes his father's dagger from under his pillow. And put it on Bud's throat. He says: **Mouth open buddy right now!** Bud opens his mouth and Maikel feels something in it but can't find a tongue.

Maikel: "Sorry buddy you scared me!"

When Bud taps his wrist, Maikel looks at his watch and the pointer stands up 11.00.

Bud is frightened by the startled Maikel, but not what a normal reaction should be. Bud is used to it. He has seen this before and tries to warn Maikel about the evil he can do. Actually, before the harm is done, Bud tries to counter it. And writes on a piece of paper: **watch out dad!**

Maikel: "For what buddy?" Bud writes down: **Evil is everywhere I feel it getting stronger in myself too!** Maikel laughs and says: "Buddy, I didn't know you were such a wimp." And walks away. When Bud is left in the bedroom, he becomes so afraid of Maikel that his pants turns wet and piss drips down on the carpet. When Bud is wet of urine, he makes a decision and hugs Chantal and walks out the front door.

When he looks back again, he sees Maikel sitting in front of the TV laughing and becomes even more afraid of his new father. Not for what Maikel can do to him. But for what he can do the rest especially, his little girl. If the frightened Bud is provoked by questioning thoughts such as: what if he puts that dagger on Chantal's throat? Walking away in the cold street full of memories of his real father and his stepfather and new father, a smile has been on his face for a long time. A real smile what a nice feeling. And he disappears in the green area with a good feeling.

Maikel takes Justin and Francis along to find a job. He says to Justin, "Come on, let's go for a ride." And to Francis: "Come on boy, let's do something." While they walk to the car that is still in the back of the neighborhood somewhere near the big mansion. Justin asks: where are we going, Dad? Maikel:

"I'm going to find a job. What kind of job should I take?" Francis looks at him thoughtfully and says: "As long as you don't become an office dick, I like it." Maikel laughs and says: "That's usually a well-paid job, boy. And honestly, the money is starting to run out a bit. You don't want your food on the table, or does that not matter to you that much?" Francis is not sure what to say, he never dared to bother about that. Justin: "Hey, isn't something like yard work for you dad?"

Maikel thinks about it and says: "Well, that could be a job close to home." When they almost arrive at the car, they pass the big mansion again. Justin no longer dares to look. Maikel puts his hand on Justin's shoulder and says: "It's all right, boy." When Francis looks at the oversized house, he says: "What the hell are we getting ourselves into? That seems to be Bud! Look at it, boys, look at it!"

Justin stutters: "Sorry fr fra Francis th th that hu hu house is no go go good ne new news." Francis: Ok then, should we help him or not? He runs into the house. Justin: "Sorry sorry dad dad dad bu bu but I can't do thi this." Maikel: "That stutter was a long time ago kiddo. But if you keep an eye on things outside you are more vulnerable because then you are alone, while we can be inside with the three of us, and even when Bud is here with the four of us. So, I'd prefer you walk in with me and scan it in a little bit. when you're scared, you're generally more attentive than when you walk in like a headless chicken like Francis just did."

Justin: "O o okay dad dad daddy."

They walk in together. Once in the much too big house, the frightened Justin notices something. He whispers *Dad Da Dad this lo loo look looks like a church or something.* Maikel looks around incomprehensibly and says: "What the... You are right man fuck.

But from the outside, it's just a big mansion." Maikel looks around in disbelief and wondered why the door was open after all.

"Boy I know I think where to look but please don't be afraid! This can be a lot to process in frightening thoughts. And I don't think this is hallowed ground either because there is a dead smell and atmosphere here." Justin's stutter has come to an end and says: "Dad I have to pull myself together, but this is a bit too much to accept at once." Maikel looks happily at his son. "Boy, I'm proud of you, but first of all we need to find Francis again." When they walk through the door at the back, they end up in a large courtyard full of greenery. Francis is sitting there on a bench next to Bud. When Maikel walks up to Francis and Bud and apologizes to Bud for earlier today. Francis points to a shed at the very back of the large green courtyard. Maikel: "Justin stay here!"

When he walks towards the shed and opens the beautiful large solid wood oak door full of decorations. He sees that his car is there and someone is sitting in the driver's seat with the car filled with smoke. When he tries to open the car, he finds out that the doors are locked. When he puts his key in the keyhole and turns the key the door opens. Someone falls out of the smoking car. He no longer breathes: his face is black with exhaust fumes.

When Maikel wipes the black exhaust fumes from his face. He sees that Koos lying there breathless. When he sees him, a huge burden falls off his shoulders with the thought that man can never hurt his children nor Amy again. When he thinks about it, he feels a boulder rolled off his shoulders. He thinks I can finally let go of that little bit of the past. He takes the hose out of his car window and sits in the car when he starts the car, she works and Maikel wonders how he gets her out of here. How does he get his car out of the shed and out of the courtyard? He asks Bud, "What are you doing here man?" To which Bud writes: I was called here by something in me. After I ran away because nobody listened to what I have to say. But you dig your own grave dad. Scratching behind his ear, Maikel concludes that he was wrong to react so aggressively to Bud and apologizes. He says: "Bud I'm sorry. You know more than we do about what's going on here."

Then Bud asks **Mikey** in a heavy demonic voice. **You don't know anything yet? Nothing is what it seems Mikey Mike.** And whispers in the demonic tone:

*If you look no further than the bridge is long, how can you  
ever see the water?*

Maikel points his finger at Bud and screams: **TOM DIRTY POISIONESS SNAKE I COME TO GET YOU AND HELL COMES WITH ME!** Bud smiles and the voice asks **I have all the time in the world Mike, have you got that too?**



Just like Maikel wants to take it out, Bud waves his arms in a frightened way and writes down: not in a trap, Dad. Maikel is white-hot with anger **I AM NOT YOUR FATHER AND I WILL NEVER BECOME YOUR FATHER! WHERE IS THAT DAMN COWARD OF A FATHER OF YOU?**

Bud writes in a panic: I don't know Dad sorry. Maikel shakes Bud until he can no longer stand on his feet and falls over with the angry words: **What do you know? And for the last time, I'm not your father and I never will be.**

Justin stops it just in time before Maikel hits Bud to the ground with a few punches. But when Justin tries to pull Maikel away from Bud, Justin feels a dull blow to his eye socket. Maikel feels it happening and immediately says: Just Just, I'm sorry, everything okay? Justin looks around confused. When Maikel wants to hug Justin, Justin runs away. He wants to get out of the church as soon as possible. Francis chases him and calls **Just, Just, come on man it was not meant that you think, Just, Just, come back man.** Justin stops by the door and looks back and screams furiously:

**Let that much too big idiot get the hell out, he has to keep his own children safe. And not hit them. I don't want to see him now, before I break all his bones in those hit-happy paws, damn him!**

He opens the door and he's gone. Francis follows him. Maikel and Bud are the only ones left in that damned church. Maikel:

"I was warned about this for years by my mother not to become like my own father. But now I unconsciously make the same mistake of that idiot." *I'm sorry buddy, I should never have reacted to you, especially to Just.* Bud gives Maikel a hand and a smile and writes down: Don't worry I understand. And Justin does that too. You have to trust that. Maikel smiles with his head overflowing from guilt. He walks to the shed with the beautifully decorated oak door and enters it. How do I get my car out of this, he thinks. And how did she get in here? When he looks for a door, he sees that there is no door, only the beautifully decorated oak door through which he entered. When he opens the oak door from the inside, he sees a black substance dripping on the left doorknob and bubbling a little on the floor. When he releases the doorknob, he sees in a millisecond a flash how he can get out of there with his car. He sees that a green hedge hides an iron gate in the corner of the courtyard. So, he throws Koossie in the trunk of his car and drives out of the shed to the hidden gate.

He starts thinking he fixed my car before he committed suicide? He says thank you, man! When he stands at the gate and looks for that gate to open. He changes his mind maybe he has the key in his possession and opens the trunk. He apologizes and feels in his pockets. When he turns around, he hears something falling in the trunk. He finds the keys to the church. Could there also be the key to the gate? He thinks. He tries three of the seven keys until the key fits and he turns the lock. The iron gate squeaks and creaks then it opens up. He says thank you again Koossie and closes the trunk again. When he drives out the gate, the mansion turns into an old-fashioned church.

Maikel doesn't understand it, but it doesn't really get his full attention. He must find Justin Francis and Bud before it is too late to make up for his mistake.

# Chapter V.

## *The betrayal.*

When he goes looking for his lost old and new son. He comes at first past the supermarket. Where he is sure he sees Tom standing there and waving at him. But as angry as he is now, his sons are going first for the moment. And then he can argue again with that old nerve eater. Second, he comes past the playground around the corner. But when he glances at it, he immediately sees that his sons are not there. So as a third option, he goes home. When he opens the door, it is dark in the house the curtains and blinds are all closed and there is no lamp or even a candle burning. The more he thinks, the more he deprives himself of his composure. He decides to turn on a lamp because the curtains will not be closed without a reason. Almost immediately when he switches on the lamp, he sees Amy with Chantal in her arms in the armchair. And the radio is on, he walks over to her and asks: "Have you seen Justin and co Aims?" Amy answered his question with a question, "Did you find a job, Mike?"

Maikel: "No, unfortunately not yet something has come up. *But I'm going to look up as soon as possible.*" Amy looks at him as if she is blaming him for something. And says in a soft tone: *Mike I'd rather you don't sleep here tonight.*

*But if you're looking for Justin, he went to the petting zoo with the boys. May I ask you something personal Mikey?*

Maikel: "Yes, of course, just ask."

**Surely it would be a relief to hit your own child. But my real question was, what was Bud's story all about, and how long will he stay in our house?**

*Maikel says: guilty Aims I have never regretted anything like this before. It destroys me inside. I'm just like my and your dad, I immediately said that to Bud when Justin walked away. The story of Bud is that I heard him say something again that Tom said when he was in here... Namely that riddle, if you look no further than the bridge, is long, how can you ever see the water? And that made me angry at the combination that Bud then called me father with a piece of paper. Here I have the paper read it.*

Amy reads the piece of paper that says don't fall for it Dad. Amy says I'm starting to understand but why Justin, why not a poisoner like Bud? Why Mike?

*"I actually intended to hit Bud but Justin pulled me off... And, and, I'm swinging around angrily. And, and, then I hit Justin in the swing with my elbow on his eye. I'm sorry Aims I'm so sorry."*

*Amy: I understand, but if you want to apologize to him you should go to the petting zoo. That's where he sits with Francis and Bud.*

Maikel: *Okay then I go there. To answer your other question about how long Bud will be here. I want to keep him here Aims. He has nowhere to go, he has no one. He is the same as we once were a long time ago. And I don't want to send him to an orphanage, foster homes in and out of orphanage in and out. He deserves this Aims. And you know that very well. He deserves to live with people who care about him.*

Amy: *But Mike I'm afraid of him. He scares the hell out of me! He scares me, Mike, his cheeks are so mutilated that you can see his teeth. And eating at the table with him is not to be seen. Besides, I did not bear him. It's not our son Mike. He belongs to someone else. he scares me so much!*

Amy starts crying. Maikel comforts her and says:

"I know Aims but that's not his fault. That's not his fault!"

Amy: Maikel go to Justin and sleep elsewhere Mike tonight. I don't want you here after today.

Maikel: Aims I go to the petting zoo and then we'll see further.

Maikel gets into his car that miraculously still works. Maikel doesn't understand anything, did Koos really fixed his car? And is the petrol tank filled? He only now notices that the petrol meter is almost full. While when he had to leave his car, his meter was about halfway.

So, he filled and made my car and then he decided to take his life in a moment, Maikel thinks I don't understand why you go to such great lengths to take your own life in the same car you made and filled. You had a scar on your stomach from another time, you couldn't walk normally anymore and yet you kept it up for so long. You were in your sixties and when you saw me, you got a few blows from me and after that, you take your own life in my car. That you first made... That is all he can think of. The big reason why he continues on his way to the petting zoo. I understand that he takes his life. I can also somewhat understand that he made my car. But both of them? He makes my car first and then stuffs the hose into the exhaust and puts it in the window. Then turn on the same car and choked out that way.

His hands are trembling his foot is spastic and he feels something dripping from his ear dripping towards his neck. When he instinctively tries to wipe it away, it starts to bubble on his fingers. And he hears a hissing sound as if something is burning. When he looks at his finger, he sees a thick black mush bubbling. He wipes his ear with a cleaning cloth that lies on the chair next to him. While rubbing his ear, he hears the hissing.. The black thick stuff bubbles like it's boiling and hisses like it's burning. But no pain, burns, or even scorched skin. The black stuff starts to move and it seems to think. He immediately thinks that stuff came out of Kerberos after stabbing that demonic beast to death. And that stuff on the doorknob of that beautiful barn door. When he arrives at the petting zoo, he is suddenly amazed to conclude that he has taken a big detour and passed that damn supermarket again.

He only feels Tom's piercing eyes and looks around angrily. But Tom is nowhere to be seen.

He gets out of the car a little calmer and goes looking for his sons. When he walks onto the site, he sees them sitting on a bench almost immediately, looking quietly at the animals. He runs to his sons and hugs Justin. He says: "Sorry man I'm sorry!" Justin looks at him with his eyes rolled in. Francis says: "He's been like this for a while now. He wants to go to the playground all the time, but we're not comfortable with that." Maikel takes Justin's hand and says:

"Come on, boy, we're going to the playground." Justin's eyes move in his upper eyelids as if they were covered with bugs. It goes very fast and it looks like there are dozens, in the small pieces of meat on his eyelids. Then when Maikel takes Justin's hand he closes his eyes, and when he opens them again his eyes are pitch black. And drops are running down. Bubbling a little on his cheeks. Francis asks: "Daddy Dad, what is that?" Maikel calmly replies, "I don't know. But the first time I saw this was with Kerberos, then in that church and then out of my ear in the car, and now with Justin. Don't worry Fran it won't hurt that stuff." When Justin gets up and points to Bud, Bud runs away. He loses a note along the way. The note blows in the wind to Maikel when Maikel looks at it, he sees a word and a drawing. The word is **Pope** and the drawing resembles an old-fashioned nature bishop. On the other side is his name **Maikel**. And a drawing of a family he is in between. Maikel asks: "Fran are you going back there, boy? Then I'll go to the playground with Justin." Francis: Yes, I do Dad. Just make sure you get Justin back home normally! "



Maikel nods yes and walks over to Justin to find out that Justin is gone again. he immediately goes to the large playground connected to the petting zoo.

When he gets there, he sees Justin climbing that big slide, and when he is upstairs the speakers hanging at the top of the playground turn on. Maikel hears guitar music coming out. He hears:

*I need to endure in this life. I need to endure for my wife. I need to endure for my kids. I need to endure of that I'm sure. You can't kill me but I dare you to try. And when you look up in the sky. I just hope you ask yourself why. Why can't I die?*

He sees Justin jump off the side of the slide. Slightly above him just like the girl he saw before. He immediately tries to catch Justin, but Justin grabs onto the half of the slide. Maikel stands underneath and says let go. Just, let go! Just I know you are afraid of heights but let go now I'm under you. Justin looks down with fiery black eyes. And screams in a shrill tone: **NO NO NEVER, YOU LOSE ME DAD IF I SHOULD DO IT MYSELF!** And in a heavy voice **you are not a savior Mike you are a survivor.** Maikel climbs up without thinking and pulls his son down. He just holds Justin while Justin falls. And says: "Shut up now!" As he says that he hears a dog growling and barking at them again. And Justin comes to he is startled as he peers down. The moment Justin is downstairs, black stuff emerges from the ground that forms something it looks like a dog's head. A dog head with a blue and a purple eye.

When Maikel slowly climbs down and slowly tries to run away from the big black dog. The dog comes closer every time. He takes Justin by the hand, paralyzed with fear. And says: "Just, Just, Justin walk away slowly." While they quietly walk away, they hear the speakers sing repeatedly: *I warn you I warn you I warn you I warn you I won't die I won't die I won't die die die die die.*

With each **die** the big dog is getting closer. And Justin immediately considers that it might be Lobo. He says: "Dad, we can just walk away. This is Lobo!" Maikel:

"Lobo?" "Yes," says Justin. "Do you remember in the car?" Maikel asks Justin,

"How do you know this is Lobo?" Justin: "Look into those eyes, Dad." Maikel looks a bit scared and asks: "Are you Lobo?" The dog quickly runs towards Maikel and envelops him like a warm cloak in the freezing cold. He sees a Spanish woman the woman says:

*Soy un de los guardias de seguridad que protegieron a los animales en el desierto. Calmarse Lobo! Eres el lider fantasma del hombre caido. Te llama la mujer confundida. escuchala, pero no olvides guiarla. Tienes que llevarla a un lugar donde la fantasia se haga realidad. Debes ser un alfa. Solo tu puedes hacer esto. Miraste la muerte.*

*Y ganaste la pelea. Debes ser este lobo. El humano necesita un lider. O todo desaparecera despues de un tiempo.*

The shadow evaporates from Maikel's body, but Maikel lies motionless on the ground. With the yellow reflection in his eyes that a wolf has in the twilight. His thoughts continue in his brain as the shadow leaves his body. He thinks why did I understand everything? why the leader of a confused man? Who is that woman she has to lead Chantal? Amy? And what did that woman mean with everything will become clear in time? And why will everything disappear? He already knows that lobo is an Alpha. An Alpha that can support you the most. An Alpha of Alpha's lobo has already saved him. And she will do that again, he is sure. The same moment, Justin hears a wolf howling, the howling sounds far away but close at the same time. It seems so close that it almost happens to him. Justin paralyzed with fear looks at his motionless father and hopes it will be all right. Even if he just blinks, that's enough Justin thinks. The moment Justin can't take it anymore and overcomes the fear. He shakes his dad and says Dad, now you wake up! When Maikel's eye starts to pull and move as if there are bugs underneath. Justin thinks to himself: That crazy guy is indestructible. At that thought, he hears that howling wolf again, but now there are more.

It sounds like there are three. It doesn't hurt Justin. All he can think is: what a beautiful thing, it is a miracle of nature. At that exact moment, Maikel wakes up afraid and says: "Just we have to go home, man."

When Justin asks: "All right Dad why Dad?"

"Yes, boy this crazy guy is indestructible, but we have to go home now." When Maikel and Justin leave the playground behind and

walk through the petting zoo to the car. They both hear a very well-known song on the speaker of the petting zoo. As they walk to the car, they hear:

*Nightmares. Nightmares. Nightmares. Everyday nightmares a blast from the past. Everything is going away but the nightmares last. Everything is going well: everybody got their own story to sell.*

They both sing along automatically:

***Who hits a child has a filthy mind. Who hits the elderly and women? Those***

***are the forsaken men. Those are the forsaken losers. So, give a knock out to the abusers...***

When they get into the car, they both hear wolves howling in the background.

Maikel looks at Justin and says: "I'm afraid they can't appreciate our singing skills, kid." Justin asks: "I just heard that, but then without singing. Where are they then?" Maikel gives a simple but thoughtful answer: "Everyone has something of an animal in them. And I think our spirit animal is a wolf. I have no other name for it, we are here in the city. But we do see and hear them. So that must be mental. Just look I don't understand that we both hear it. But if you are sure to see something then you will see it.

And if you are certain to feel or hear something, then you feel or hear it. For some reason, our brain produces images and sounds. I think it's the reason."

"I hadn't thought of that to be honest. But if two people hear it at the same time, it is there, isn't it?"

"I think that's because of the stress of the last days. Actually, since we moved to this new cursed house. I think the things that live in the wall of our house now change our perception. This means that we see things that may or may not be there."

"Can't you do that?"

"If you have a different explanation, then I would like to hear it."

While Justin scratches his ear to make up an explanation. He asks: "Things that live in the wall, Dad?"

Maikel laughs and says: "Yes, things that live in our wall." Justin asks reluctantly, "What kind of things, Dad, are they a threat to us or Chantal?" Maikel starts the car and says as he drives off, "I don't know that kid. But I do know that it has taken a toll on our perception. And I don't know what reality and fiction is anymore. " While Justin looks at Maikel with the interrogative words on his tongue from Dad what are you talking about? Maikel explains that perception is a very powerful quality. He explains to Justin that the power of perception is just an expensive word for the power of everyone's seeing and hearing abilities. But that he simply cannot explain that they can both see and hear some things.

He says: "So my perception of this is that it could be because of the things that live in our wall." When he tries to explain it further in plain language, they encounter Bud and Francis along the way. They're walking at that supermarket. And Maikel concludes that it doesn't matter who. But that everyone through that petting zoo passes that damn supermarket on the way home. Could Amy have passed by then than when she met Tom? No, he thinks when he opens the door for Francis and Bud. No, she deliberately went to that supermarket.

When Francis and Bud get into the car, the car radio almost immediately turns on at the highest volume. Justin and Francis are shocked while Maikel is preoccupied with thoughts about home. And Bud is just drawing quietly in the back seat. Maikel mainly thinks about Amy and whether she would still be in the dark with Chantal in her arms. Thinking about how he beat up Justin. But Justin doesn't blame him at all, nor does he blame Bud. So that's a good thing. Bud is just drawing there. And Justin but especially Francis are their hands on their ears for the volume of the radio is too loud. Who speaks to the occupant in unintelligible language? The volume is too high to make any of the static noise. Francis angrily makes a mess of Bud's drawing and throws it into Maikel's neck. When Maikel feels the wad deform on his neck, he is startled awake from his thoughts. And he sees Bud standing up in the rearview mirror. The moment he turns the radio down, Bud starts pointing at Francis and screams in a shrill scream.

*Thou shalt not humiliate me again herald. Thou shalt not touch the messenger of God. Thou will not...*

Maikel interrupts Bud's words with the words: You must shut up man Christian scum. Then the shrill screaming tone changes into a heavy dark voice.

**Good Mikey Mike, Anger that's good for you.** And the dark voice is whispering, *this is good for your judas*. At that moment Francis opens Bud's door and kicks him out of the car. With the words and stay away man. Bud's last words are in a heavy voice: **Faciam te in impius corpus diaboli semen!** While the last words in the car radio remain screaming.

*Diaboli semen, Diaboli semen, Diaboli semen Diaboli semen, Diaboli semen, Diaboli semen.*

Maikel tries to turn off the radio but only when Maikel is far away from Bud does the radio stop repeating those words that hurt him so much in his youth. He was always called devil's seed at home. In Dutch English and Latin. When he finally arrives in the street at 6 pm. Starts playing that radio again. Francis says: "I'm afraid of what will happen Dad." And Justin can only be silent. When they walk in silently, Amy immediately says: "Mike eats and sleep somewhere else!"

Maikel senses Bud's presence, but Amy doesn't tolerate contradiction and says:

"Mike, if you don't leave now, I'll call the police. Something that should have happened two days ago!" Maikel does not dare to go against Amy but makes it clear to him that he has no fear of the police.

And says: "Aims do what you can't resist but watch out in this house!" But Amy interrupts his words with the words: "Man don't think of yourself like that, you did this you alone!" She slams the door shut. The moment she slams the door shut with a bang, Maikel walks sadly through the dark streets of the reproachful street. The street that got everything and looked at the sad Maikel with a judgmental look through the curtains. Like a lion or tiger scanning his or her meal for weaknesses. Maikel, unable to give himself an posture, walks back to his car. For a moment, it seems like the neighborhood is smiling when he hears a girl laugh. The laughter goes through the bone marrow. But Maikel tries not to be bothered by it. And walks to his car, he opens the door, starts the car and drives away. Maikel knows that the money is running out, he only has 275.89 or so in the bank so a hotel is not going to walk into him. He resolves to have a drink in that small pub he saw earlier. One or two drinks to come to his senses a drink he thinks to himself.

He comes past the mansion. But where the mansion once stood, there is now an old-fashioned church. To understand it all, Maikel looks around. If he decides to walk into the church to look around the church itself. Just got three people there at the time. He looks around confused and also sits down on the bench. The moment Maikel sits down and looks back, the three people look at him at the same time. And say to him in a sultry tone:



*Welcome Maikel, thank you Maikel, welcome Maikel, thank you  
Maikel, Maikel Maikel Maikel Maikel.*

Maikel asks: "Thank you very much for the warm welcome, but do I happen to know you?"

*Thank you Maikel, Maikel find your faith.*

And in a heavy screaming voice:

**Maikel Mikey Mike go away go away go away now...**

Then the people disappear from the church in a kind of white smoke. And the doors slam shut, when Maikel tries to walk out of the church he finds out that the doors are locked. The doors are barricaded from the outside. When he screams asking for help, "***Can anyone help me? help the doors be closed.***"

A man creeps up to him from behind and puts his hand on Maikel's shoulder. He is startled and hits the man on his jaw. When Maikel wants to grab a candlestick to pound the man's head, the man says:

*Quietly, but we are all children of darkness. We have all been brought up to believe in something that we have turned our backs on. I have no harm in you do you Maikel?*

Maikel puts the candlestick back in place. At the same time as the candlestick hits the ground, all the lights go out and only the candles are still lit. When Maikel looks at the man, Maikel sees nothing but the green glow in the man's eyes.

The green glow keeps shining brighter. Until Maikel is sucked into the man's point of view. When Maikel feels light on his feet, the man only laughs in a dark tone. Then the light in the church becomes the man, and when Maikel tries to open the doors, it miraculously succeeds. Maikel, still light-headed, walks back to his car to continue on his way to the pub. But his car is nowhere to be seen. And he hears the man's voice in his head asking:

*If you look no further than the bridge is long how can you ever see the water?*

Maikel angrily walks back into the church and screams: **get out of my head, poisoner.**

But when he stands there broken in church, he hears the man's devilish laugh again. Maikel says: Fuck off! and walks out of the church. When he walks out of the church, three people are waiting for him the same three as were in the church. And people cheer him in a sultry voice.

*Come on Maikel you can do it come on Maikel come on you can do it.*

**The answer is under your nose, Maikel.**

When Maikel looks back to the church and back to the people, the people are gone. As if they evaporated in the air. Or disappeared into that smoke again. Maikel can only think of two single things and that is: I need my glass of whiskey. And where has my car gone? He thinks to himself where is that pub?

And continues on through the dark streets and the dark nearby park. Where there are a multitude of bridges, he must immediately think of that damn riddle. And he's trying to see the water from those bridges. But no water to see the park is too dark, he thinks to himself. When he looks from under the bridges, he does not see any water yet. And when he feels, he feels the dry earth from where water once used to be. He never took that proverb seriously, but this is strange, he thinks to himself.

Continuing thoughtfully, he sees the green lights of an Irish pub in the distance. He feels euphoric because he is finally there. Just by finding that damn thing, he already feels like a king. When he crosses the last bridge and is almost there, he makes a kind of dance of joy. He is even happier when he sees the name of the pub:

### *An Tsochai.*

When he walks in, he immediately asks the bartender: "Can I have a beer and a whiskey?" The bartender initially says **no** and turns his head. When Maikel gets mad and says: "That's your only work prick and you refuse a paying customer." The bartender looks at him and growls a bit. It doesn't make Maikel any wiser. Then Maikel gets help from a regular guest. The regular says: "Leave him like this, he's always this way to new customers, isn't he?" Then looks at Maikel and growls again. Maikel asks the regular guest: "Is he always like this?" To which the regular guest replies, "Only to new because new is not old, and old is not new." Maikel scratches his head and thinks she will. When Maikel asks the bartender, "Oi can I get something now?"

The regular gives his thumb up, and the bartender arrives with a beer and a whiskey. When the bartender puts it on the table and looks arrogantly at Maikel, the regular says:

"Dan you are challenging him now." Dan arrogantly walks on. And Maikel gets up. The regular guest tries to stop Maikel but Maikel is no longer himself. He clenches his right fist and pulls the arrogant bartender towards him with the left, hitting him as hard as he can. The bartender goes to the ground. While the bartender is lying on the floor, Maikel continues to hit by blind with anger. No one interferes. Maikel saves two more stands and walks to his stool. The regular guest laughs and says:

"Well, he deserved it." The regular offers Maikel a cigarette.

Maikel sips his beer and sips his whiskey. Maikel: "I'm sorry but I do not smoke." The regular guest: "everything has to be a first time." Maikel: "Yes it will but I don't smoke." The regular guest makes an offer to Maikel and says: "I am the owner of this Irish pub. Would you like a job? "

*That's nice of you sir. The money is running out I could use something. But what is your name?*

The owner: "I am pleased to Petrus. Yes, I can already see your gaze! My parents were religious." Maikel shakes hands with the owners and says:

I am Maikel, and it is my pleasure to work for you.

But then you have to do something about the current bartender. Because don't get me wrong that man is chasing the customers away. "Petrus laughs:" Don't worry. Dan and me we share a past." Then Petrus takes an expensive bottle and Maikel thinks that is to seal the deal, of course. But Petrus does not walk to Maikel with the bottle and throws the entire contents over the bartender who is still knocked out. Dan wakes up and immediately when Dan wakes up Petrus says:

*Sorry, Dan but you're fired, mate.*

Petrus winks at Maikel and jokes:

*Look smoking comes in handy.*

Petrus lights a match. Maikel doesn't say **no don't...** but it's too late. Dan cries out and walks like a madman through the Irish pub. He tries to roll over the ground to stop the blue-yellow flames. Maikel can't bear it and tries to help Dan, but unfortunately, it is too late. Dan falls to the ground and Maikel smells the burnt smell of human flesh when he manages to get the last flames out. The fragrance suffocates Maikel. The moment Maikel can no longer breathe through the shock combined with the suffocating odor, he walks over to Petrus and picks up the empty bottle.

While he picks up the bottle, the regulars laugh. Maikel does not know what happens to him and asks the people, breathless and breathless: *please stop stop... Stop laughing. That man was innocent stop...*

But the regulars just laugh harder. Until Petrus hits the table with his fist and forcibly says: **Enough...** A simple word but it is enough to make people stop. There is no longer even a chuckle or a smile. People have finally stopped laughing. Petrus: "Sit down." Maikel's first reaction is to run away. But decide to sit down anyway. Petrus puts his arm on his shoulder and says: "Well Mike that problem has been solved." Maikel knows nothing to say and tries to breathe in the pub that is blue with smoke. Petrus:

"Mike breathe in and out gently, breathe in for four seconds hold for seven seconds, and then breathe out for eight seconds. Believe me that works." Maikel tries but does not succeed. Petrus says in a calm tone:

*Try putting your tongue on your palate when you breathe out.*

Maikel tries it and it is getting better.

*Nice now try to breathe in through your mouth for four seconds.*

Maikel does that and Petrus counts.

*Now hold your breath for seven seconds.*

Maikel does that with difficulty and Petrus counts.

*Now exhale through your mouth for eight seconds and starts counting. One two three four five six seven eight. Well done Mike and now again.*

Maikel slowly starts to breathe again in a calm way. When Maikel can breathe calmly again, he asks: "But why did you do that?" Petrus: "He was not sweet and certainly not innocent." Maikel looks at Petrus desperate and asks: "Why he didn't do anything wrong?" Petrus laughs and says: "It takes more than today to piss us off. In his first week, he slept with the women of the regular customers. In his third week, he stole from me. And all those pile-ups literally killed him in his eighth week!" Maikel: "But I didn't know that. And yet I still think it is too much of a good thing." Petrus: "Mike, how would you like it if he was in your bed with your woman. What had you done Mikes? What would you have done if he was in bed with Amy?" Maikel immediately attacks: "Where do you know Amy from dick?" And clenches his fist. Petrus: "Calm down Mike you came to live here this week, right?" Maikel replies confused:

"Yes, we are. But how do you know her?" Petrus: "Calm down, but this is a small village, people talk.

I even know you have three children. But do not worry with us you are safe. But you haven't given me an answer yet, Mikes." Maikel: "What would I have done if he cheated on my Amy? I killed him. My children's mother? The love of my life? And that arrogant guy in her... No, I shouldn't think about that arrogant guy who was dry-humping my wife? That madman no that is not going to be with me!! That weak extract of a..." Petrus interrupts him and asks: "Do you understand?"

Maikel looks at the burned-out body in the middle of the pub and says: "Yes I get it." Petrus: "Mikes, come along."

He walks out of the back door. Maikel follows him and enters a kind of beautiful green paradise. Petrus: "This is the core of our Irish pub and runs to the center of the green garden. Normally I don't do this but can you snap some branches? Start with the little ones and then work your way up to the big one." Maikel does what he is asked to do and Petrus makes a kind of hut in the garden. Petrus begins to explain that the soul of the fallen must come to their place.

*My parents were Irish believers. And I have nothing to do with faith, but I do believe that there must be something. Celtic faith believes in the burning of fallen people or soldiers. To get their soul to their final destination.*

And puts the last twigs on the big stake. When the last branch is on, the regulars come out with the corpse. And put him on the stake. Petrus explains: *This is something I also believe in namely: The people you hurt in your life are allowed to burn you. Then we are sure that his soul will end up well.*

*Do you want to light him Mikes since he was the last to mistreat you?*

Maikel says: "No, let the first person who hurt him do that. Then at least that gene has closed the case."

Petrus: "Look, I want to see that, you are not a self-centered bag. Thank you, Mike!" And as a final tribute, gives a wooden Celtic cross to Dan and says: *You will get there man I will take care of that!*

When a regular guest takes Dan's zippo out of his pocket it burns the pyre with it.



When the flames rise and the crows scream, Petrus says *I thought so. The great spiritual crow leader takes him to his final destination. He'll get there guys!*

The regulars start to laugh. Maikel gives Dan his last respect by giving him a flower from the beautiful green paradise garden and says: "You are doing well. You must have been a good guy.

We just started off wrong." Petrus interrupts Maikel's chat with Dan and says: "Mikey it's about 10:30 PM!" Points to his watch and walks in. Maikel quickly follows him and asks:

"Where are we going now?"

Petrus sits down at the same table as before and asks Maikel: "You just said you had little money, what are you happy with per week?" Maikel thinks about it and asks: "What can you offer me, Peet?" Petrus answers: "I can only offer you and you 350.00 cash for a 20-hour working week. What do you think?" Maikel immediately says **deal** and shake Petrus's hand. Petrus immediately starts and gives him 100.00, he says: "This is for your help today." Maikel: "Thank you man this comes in handy." He puts it in his pocket. Petrus says: "Just to be clear 350.00 a week in cash." And extends his hand. Maikel shakes his hand and says happily, "Thank you for the opportunity!" Petrus says in a nice tone:

*Mike make sure you go home with this news then Amy will let you in.*

Maikel's gaze turns cold again and asks Petrus:

## How do you know Aims threw me the fuck out?

Petrus says: "Calm down, I said all this village is talking. Especially for new people." Maikel drinks his beer, drinks his glass of whiskey, and shakes hands with Petrus: **See you tomorrow.** Maikel walks out of the pub at that moment the old-fashioned jukebox catches on. He hears:

*Moonlight on the open road. My own drink in my bottle. I'm on my way to the endless possibilities on my bike. When I see the devil out of nowhere. The lord doesn't want to forgive me. I make the devil tremble. I cannot forget the injustice. Out my way while I reassemble.*

*No way back. Not an endless flight. No burden on my shoulders. Shadows have my back. Hate my parents. Fast forward no more thinking. Fast forward into the fight.*

*No more thinking about the past. Dreaming for the future. But live in the present. People hear people talk. People see people should leave me alone. People walk on an illuminated road. I'm on trial through the darkness further on.*

He looks back again and thinks wow that's a nice song. I want to hear it completely. But decide to walk into the park again. He has to go home someday. Amy please, Aims please let me in. Yes, Aims let me in.

He walks home in good spirits. But he immediately notices that the dry earth under the bridges has now become water. He immediately thinks of that riddle again:

*If you look no further than the bridge is long how can you ever  
see the water?*

For another time he thinks in his tipsy behavior of the beer and those few sips of whiskey he keeps thinking about it. The park is too dark to see anything. But he continued as the green lights of the Irish pub disappear behind him. The park turns pitch black when he sees nothing anymore because even the green lamps no longer illuminate the park. The wind there is colder than what he is used to from the village. And he realizes that this could be because there is now water under the bridges. He thinks the water makes the wind so cold and continues in a hopeless park. But the further he walks the more anxious he becomes. He feels eyes in his back but sees nothing. He knows deep down that there is something. That thought scares him even more. Every step he takes, he feels the lurking eyes approaching. When he even hears footsteps behind him, he starts to run faster and faster, just to get out of that damn cunt park.

He looks up at the sky, but the moon does not light up much because the too full trees block the moonlight. There is not even a star in the sky, it is just a bleak dark evening. But no matter how far he walks, he can't get out of that dark park. And when he looks back, he again sees nothing looking at him. He thinks to himself whether I will be afraid of the dark at the age of twenty-nine or I will suffer from pursuit anxiety or I will really be haunted by something invisible. Well, I've never been afraid of the dark and an invisible man does not exist. So, then pursuit anxiety is the only thing left. But this is a park and people come in a park.

He looks back more and more and every time he looks back in combination with the cutting cold wind, he gets lighter in his head. Until the light feeling turns into a drunken feeling. Until he starts to drift and stagger to the end of that dark park. He thinks to himself I can no longer see the park through the trees. And he laughs. But the more he laughs the more he staggers. Until a crow laughs with him. He says *hey you have to sleep go to sleep **Sleep!*** The crow stops laughing and he says: "I am magic, it is magic... **Sleep! Sleep! Sleep...** Oh well, I'm tiring myself no I cannot sleep, I can only sleep at home with Aims!" He sees a light and he shouts: **PEOPLE PEOPLE! I see civilization. The end is in sight!** But the more he walks towards the lights the further away they are from him. And he says: *come back come back, come now...*

*Come, come here, come back, **fuck you lamp!** stupid light won't listen. **What A Shit Lamp.*** At that point, all the crows start screaming and laughing. *Ha you are still awake but it does not matter because I am magical. Sleep!*

*Sleep! **Sleep.** Your eyelids are getting heavy, **sleep.***

But the crows do not intend to go to sleep and come down from the trees with a loud noise. Maikel tries to demand the crows to get back into them tree. He remembers Petrus's words and says while waving his hands:

*Spiritual crow leader let them go to sleep. Tomorrow is a beautiful day to mess around, but not now.*

The crows don't stop and keep getting closer to Maikel. Until the crows surround him and lure him with their beak to the center point of the circle. When Maikel is standing still, the crows do not say a peep, but when Maikel moves anything, the crow's screech in panic. Maikel begins to realize that he has to stop and asks the crows, "What's the matter, guys?" At that moment he sees the park light up slightly and the crows all point their heads at the same time to the bushes to the left of him. Maikel is suddenly sober and looks scared at the bushes to his left. Where he sees two reflective green eyes looking at him.

The crows screech their lungs out of their little bodies, and Maikel understands that the crows had been trying to make that clear to him all along. He says okay guys I'm listening to you. Then he sees a crow with a huge wingspan crashing down into the slightly lit area of the park. The wings of this crow have a wingspan of perhaps two meters and the crow itself is gigantic. When the crow sits down in front of the bushes and gazes at the reflective green eyes, all the other crows start to attack. By calling the rest of the crows in the park with a cry for help. The rest quickly comes too, Maikel knows that the crows protect him from a certain beast. The giant crow immediately looks back at him. He sees something flickering in the crow's wide eyes. When the gigantic crow looks at Maikel, all dozens of crows attack that green-eyed beast. Maikel hears the crows screaming and that damned beast loses against the majority of crows. And runs away, immediately when those green eyes are out of sight. The giant crow walks towards Maikel and Maikel thanks the crows for their protection. But the giant crow is not ready yet and sits right in front of Maikel.

When Maikel looks into the crow's eyes, he sees something he would rather not have seen. He sees a mass in a church and is read from a book. He does not hear what is being said, but he sees that the children are caught in the neck by the priest.

And that the priest walks with the children to an altar where he pulls off her fingernails, toenails, eyelashes, and other things with all kinds of tools. The adults cut their hands and arms with a dagger-like that of his own father. They drop the blood on the won pieces of the children. The children are brought down shortly afterward. And the adults sing something in an unintelligible language and accent. Exploding the beautiful glassware of the church. From there comes a shadow that eats the blood and won pieces of children on the altar of the church. Afterward, Maikel sees the shadow fly down where the children are, multiplying into a small piece for each child. The shadow flies in the mouth of the chained children. And at the same time, they fall to the ground with their arms still in the cuffs. They break all their bones while the children don't make a beep. The shadows fade from every child so that the shadow is now even bigger and becomes a whole again. As the shadow moves up to the adults, the adults are all standing with their arms out and their hands apart until the shadow multiplies again, crawling into each of the adults. The adults fall and get convulsions. A kind of foam layer forms in the corners of their mouth. Green foam comes out from their mouth. And the grown-up people make a choking sound. When it is quiet, the adult people get up again and walk outside without saying a word. Then Maikel sees the giant crow again the crow screeches nods his big head and flies away. Maikel says: "Thank you spiritual crow leader!"

He continues his path, But strangely he can see everything in the park, and thanks to his new sight he walks out of the park.

"Thank you, spiritual crow leader."

He also thanks the other crows by saying, "I couldn't have made it without you, thank you guys!" The crows scream respectfully and Maikel finally walks out of that damned park. As he walks through the dark streets of the neighborhood and has a better view than the street lamps illuminate the sidewalk. When he arrives at the church. Again, he sees the three people standing in front of the church who say to him in a sultry tone:

**Maikel will get your faith back. Our lord will *sabe* you.**

After saying that they disappear in a white smoke to the dark night in the doomed village.

Maikel is not comfortable with the appearance of the church. So, he decides to walk home. When he walks through the much too dark streets, his visibility improves as he passes every lamppost. Until he can just look in the dark as if it were daylight.

He walks home in one single breath. His stamina has also improved. He feels strong again, he feels supreme. He feels like a king has to feel, like a former king in the darkness getting ready for a battle won.

He rings the bell It takes a while before someone comes to the door.

But to his surprise, when the door opens, Bud is standing in the doorway. He gives Maikel a piece of paper that says: where were you Dad? Maikel says: "Buddy, I have a job buddy." Bud jumps Maikel around his neck and lets him in. He turns on the lights in the living room and Maikel's vision is gone for a moment. He decides to sit down until he can see again and puffs out the tension. Then Amy comes down and she asks: "Buddy, who was that?" Maikel says "It was me Aims and I have good news." Amy doesn't want to know about it at first she says: "I know you couldn't help it with Justin, he explained that to me. You don't know half how good your kids are Mike you really don't know! Justin has a thick black eye and yet he picks it up for you. Francis ditto Mikey I'm sorry. I should have listened to you. "

Maikel says: "Aims Aims please let me talk." He gives her the 100.00 euros that he just received from Petrus. "Aims I have one job!"

She scratches her head a bit and asks: "How many hours Mike?"

"20 hours a week and the wages are incredible." "Can we get the rent payed with it?" Maikel: "It's easy with two weekly wages even something left." Amy jumps up in amazement and asks: "100.00 from 8:00 pm?" Maikel: "Yes, you want to hear something beautiful, because I will get it in cash!" Bud immediately writes scared on a piece of paper: Dad *watch out please watch out.*

Maikel reads the piece of paper and says: "Calm down, but boy nothing is happening. Especially not with me. Because I am protected by something outside this world."



Bud writes down: *I'm afraid of Dad!*

Maikel reads the piece of paper and asks Bud, "Do you know anything boy? Something I don't know? What happened in that church buddy?" Bud scratches the paper manically until the piece of paper tears. Then he tears the piece of paper from his notebook and eats the paper. He throws away his notebook. And he angrily walks up the stairs. Maikel says to Amy, "Wait a minute. I provoked this I wanted this response. I need to know..." Amy: "Yeah, I think that child is so scary. With his mutilated face and his back under the scratches. I feel so sorry for him. But I am also terrified of him. So, do what you can't resist."

Maikel:

"Okay wait a minute."

When Maikel picks up the notebook and makes the scratches clear with a pencil, he finds out that there is a name hidden in the scratch, namely:

***NAMTILLAKU.***

Maikel tears the piece of paper from the notebook and puts it in his wallet. He says: "I have an answer for this tomorrow." Maikel takes the piece of paper out of his wallet again. Amy reads the piece of paper and says: "Mike, I don't see anything, just scratches." "Look Aims here, here it is!" "Yes, but Mike it can't be read."

Maikel answers: **NAMTILLAKU**. Amy says: "Yes and understandable now." "I don't have a translation for sorry Aims yet, wait until tomorrow." He folds the piece of paper in half and puts it back in his wallet. He asks: "Can I sleep at home again?" "Didn't I say that a moment ago?" It feels like a rock is falling off his shoulders. Amy: "Mike come on we go to bed now it's 1:00 am and you you have to go to work tomorrow right?"

Maikel looks at his digital watch and it is at 06:00. He says: "Working hours are still unknown to me."

"If you get paid, we find a way we always do, right? Come to bed!" She takes his hand and they walk up the stairs together.

When they both see someone running into the landing at the top of the stairs. Maikel does not think twice and runs after the person with the words

**Stop or I'll pull your spine through your throat.**

The person leads him to Chantal's room and slams Chantal's door with a bang. Amy says scared: *Be careful Mike*. But Maikel no longer hears and blind with anger he storms into the room of his little girl. Chantal starts to cry from the enraged Maikel. When he has caught the person, he grabs into a silhouette. Maikel loses his balance and trips over the cuddly toys on the floor. He says ***I'll take you down!*** But the person flees outside through the window of the nursery. Maikel gets up and immediately closes his little girl's window. He turns on Chantal's lamp and he says: *Aims I sleep with her tonight I don't trust it.*

Amy asks scared: *who was that Mike?* Maikel picks up the crying Chantal and says: "I don't know Aims. But I know that the bullshit doesn't suit me now."

What is that girl what did I do now? Did I fell on your black monster?"

He picks up the black **plush toy** and says in a threatening tone...  
**Monster not happy with Maikel, monster takes Maikel, monster takes Tallie.** And he brings the monster to Chantal's hair. Whereupon Chantal drops the monster: *Monster naughty. Don't touch Daddy. Daddy problems without you enough.*

"Thank you, Tallie, I've been having a lot of problems lately." Chantal takes Maikel's nose and says *love daddy love daddy.*

Maikel: "Yes, I love you too girl girl." Chantal laughs and says to *Daddy difficult.* "Why Tallie? Why is Daddy difficult? " Chantal laughs and babbles again against the wall. Amy enters the room with a pillow and says: "Good night Mike." Maikel "Thank you Aims!" He puts the pillow next to Chantal's crib on her play mat. Chantal lays down next to her and says calmly: *sleep well Aims, until tomorrow girls.* Amy turns off Chantal's lamp and her nightlight.

Maikel tired of all the hustle and bustle of this weird day falls asleep almost immediately after he says I love you so much to Chantal. Maikel wakes up from a crying Chantal standing upright in her bed.

When Maikel wakes up immediately in the fighting position he sees nothing.

He is confused and tired, as he blinks his vision changes every time, he closes his eyes. Until he can see what makes Chantal cry like that. A fat, drab black dog is panting by her bed.

Maikel looks confused at the big dog and does not understand what he is going through now. When he turns on Chantal's lamp again. The dog immediately attacks Maikel, he just manages to stop the dog. The dog hangs over his head with his mouth. The dog has long orange-red teeth like pointless pins. The teeth are as thick as a pen. And he sees through the orange-red green foam from the back his mouth forms like drool. The dog starts to growl and bark, he feels the dog coming closer with his head, and he feels the dog's drool burning in his face.

Just like in the old days how the butts burn his arms and feet. Chantal starts to scream and Maikel hears her scream the name Nilai. Three long exhausting seconds of stopping-power later, two-color eyes form in Chantal's window. A blue and a purple one, Maikel knows what that could mean. Lobo is back. With that science, he becomes more powerful at stopping that wimpy black dog. He pushes the dog upside down in a single breath and sees a shadow entering the room. Chantal screams ***Nilai help.***

While Maikel takes a felt-tip pen off the ground and stabs the black demonic reincarnation of a dog in his neck seven times. Green foam begins to form in the wound, as Maikel sticks through he burns his hand through the stuff the crow leader showed. He hears his little girl say: ***Nilai stay.***

Maikel intensively inserts the felt-tip pen into the gaping wound of the devil dog and snaps the dog's neck by turning the pen. The dog falls to the ground while Nilai is sitting at Chantal's bed observing Maikel.

When Maikel gets up the dog almost immediately deforms into something bigger, Maikel hears the bones cracking and deforming when he looks around, that devilish beast keeps getting bigger, driven by the yellow foam. Maikel is not afraid and challenges him he says:

*You can do anything you want to me, but you will stay away from my family.*

The confident Maikel makes it seem like the demon is thinking. At that moment, the lamp in Chantal's room is turned off. But Maikel just sees as if it is daylight. Something flickers in his eyes that look like purgatory and he sees the demon black dog dripping down Chantal's ground. Just then Nilai comes to him and he sees the real shape of her as if she had never been anything else.

He sees the little animal that was sold in the observatory. Maikel says: "Thank you, Lobo!" Nilai blinks her eyes. Shortly after, he hears wolves howling from far away. He knows that he has now proven himself and that he is not alone. He says thank you again Nilai.

Nilai lets him hear a name the name:

### *Fitheach Cosanta.*

The name sounds in the soft voice of the Spanish woman who saved Nilai.

Maikel does not have to think about it for a moment, he knows that it is about the spiritual crow leader. And says: "I think so too." Nilai cries and is gone in an instant. Maikel checks whether everything is okay with Chantal and asks: "How often does this happen?" Chantal laughs and says: *Daddy strong*. Maikel says a little anxiously:

*Yes, daddy is very strong especially when it comes to mommy or you.*

When Maikel feels the wound on his hand, he feels pits and burns on his knuckles up to his thumb and on his back-hand. His right hand only, but he is no longer sure of his job, as a bartender, you have to use your hands a lot and this will scare people off.

It doesn't hurt him, but he might need gloves now. At that thought, Amy's alarm goes off and he hears it as if the alarm is right next to him. Just an old-fashioned alarm clock with sound bells. Where even the neighbors can wake up from. Wasn't she awake already? But now he has to get rid of his fatigue all over again so he comes to the conclusion it was just a dream. When he kisses Chantal says good morning and then walks to the bathroom to wash. He sees that the burns have not yet disappeared. To his surprise, the burns even found a place in his face. He thinks to himself it was just a dream or a nightmare? As he walks down with Chantal in his arms, he can't help but keep looking at his right hand.

When he is downstairs, he immediately walks to the kitchen for his well-deserved cup of coffee. After a long night full of tension and an awakening full of confusion.

#### *Day IV.*

He feels great with the simmering coffee machine and Chantal babbling at him. He beat a living demon last night. He is awake enough to realize that it happened. And he has the injuries to prove it.

He is the boss in his house with Amy and the kids. And no one will make their life a living hell anymore. No Koos no Tom no Jehovah's or what it was at that church no one at all.

Bud joins the family and is so tired that he can't keep his eyes open. Every time he nodded with fatigue, Maikel sees Judas in his eyelids. Maikel tries to look away but somehow can't put his gaze elsewhere. He says out of pity: *Buddy do you want a cup of coffee?*

Bud nods and puts the hot jug of coffee on his throat. While he gulps the coffee as if nothing is wrong, drops of black drape comes down from his neck. Maikel immediately thinks of that dog last night. Would Bud have summoned him? And he decides to take another good look in his basement. Especially where he found Bud. When he opens the cellar door, Amy says softly:

*Don't do it, Mike!*

But Maikel needs to know what is hidden there. He walks down the basement stairs to where he found Bud in the back corner of the large basement. He tries to turn on the basement lamp but the lamp explodes. He thinks ha-ha you can't get me that easy I got a new view. And blinks his eyes a few times to find the necessary vision. When he has found the right vision and points where he found Bud. Does he think something that should have been hidden is a symbol written on the floor in that black drape.

It is written in a circle and it looks like a fence with a single protruding slat in the top center and a half triangle on the side as a point of an arrow.

With a ball at all four ends. As Maikel thinks I copy this I want to know more. He looks at the wall behind an old steel cupboard. That thing is very heavy but he has to side with Maikel. While trying to find the right sight, he immediately sees a name that seems familiar to him. The name is written in giant letters and dried in blood:

***NAMTILLAKU.***

He takes a picture of the circle with his phone and the name he also takes a picture of. When he goes up the basement stairs, he checks his phone to see if he has photographed it correctly. To find out that the photos show nothing. When he plays with his sight again, now he sees it again. He tries to find Namtillaku on his phone. However, no useful information appears.



He decides to leave but when he presses the button on his car keys and the orange lights turn on twice, he sees an old acquaintance standing in the neighbor's garden. He thinks to himself that is not possible. That cannot be true. I'm sure this is in my head. Or wait... No, this is in my head.

He sees Maikel and walks towards him with the words: "Hey boy how are you doing nowadays?" Maikel is unable to give an attitude and says a bit cautiously and anxiously: "Hi Dad, how is he hanging out?" "A little to the left, but everything can be changed, right?" "Yes, dad everything can be changed." He no longer knows what reality and fantasy is and asks: "Is it really you Dad?" "Mike I was wrong and you were entitled to do what you did. I asked for it myself every day. I didn't want to live anymore, but honestly, didn't want to die that way either. I'm coming back now to make up for my mistakes at least I try. But I don't know if that's still possible Mike. You are deep in it, very deep. And I'm afraid you won't get out that easy anymore. Not as easy as I thought. The original idea was better than the implementation. But Mikey don't repeat your mistake, boy."

Maikel is missing his father's point and angrily asks:

### **What mistake Dad?**

His father answers:

"The only mistake that gave you the name Judas.

The name you hate so much and have been chasing you all your life I'm sorry Mike. Really, but think back to that summer with your friends. "

Maikel gets tears in his eyes and asks: "Dad I didn't know and I'm trying to warn Justin and Francis about it. They also understand, but what if, like me, they have no choice what then Dad? "

Maikel's father smiles and says calmly:

*They'll get there with the right education. They've been holding on for so much longer than you without that junk. I have faith in your kids, Mike. They know. But you really have to take on the father role these days believe me otherwise you will never forgive yourself. You have to be there before even that demon can end up in your house. And I know you're already trying that. You are a good guy Mike but sometimes a little too good. So good that you become blind to your environment. What did your mother always say?*

*Those who are not strong must be mean and those who are not mean must be able to learn.*

*Learning Mikey is also exploring your environment. And eventually, use the environment against your enemy. That is the advice I can give you. Do what you want with it! I give you another tip. This environment is more damaging than a sleeping volcano!*

If Maikel wants to ask what should I do? His father is gone like a ghost in the first ray of sunshine. He shouts:

## **Dad, what should I do then? What should I do Dad?**

But he's more confused than ever has he just had a visit from a dead man? Or is that because of the damn Namtillaku?

Every thought feeds his subconscious fear until he drips in like the little boy from the past. He walks in and Bud sits down next to him and hands him a piece of paper that says: "**My dad used to drink this when he was scared.**" And then gives Maikel a glass of whiskey. Maikel: "Yes, thank you, buddy, it will go now." He drinks the glass in a gulp and asks Bud, "Can I have another one?" Bud walks into the basement and returns with another glass of whiskey. With the bottle in his left hand, he walks over to Maikel and puts the bottle down on the table. He writes on a piece of paper: **Take it easy Dad.** But Maikel again puts the glass on his throat and drinks it in a single gulp. Bud laughs and writes: **Then you don't, I mean well.**

When Amy sits down next to Maikel and sees the bottle of whiskey, she looks at the label. And after reading the two words of Irish whiskey, she empties the bottle into the sink.

Maikel follows her angrily and asks: **What are you doing?** Amy calmly looks at Maikel like a river with a calm current and says

*Mike look and read.*

**Yes, so whiskey!**

*Do you remember the conversation with Tom? I did not get any whiskey at home yet. And I wouldn't take Irish anyway as Mr. doesn't like that right Mike?*

And she slightly raises her voice with the words

***Watch out, man. This way you waste everything you've built up, look out of your eyes.***

Maikel feels his fear turning into anger but knows she's just right and says:

*Yes, Aims sorry I didn't think it over. I have to think before I do something and throw away something in my life again. Once again, I have been too gullible but I'm only human, I am so tired. I didn't care as long if it was booze. I must forget I must!*

He holds her in tears. He sobs, *"I must forget my past Aims!"* Amy holds him and says calmly:

*I understand Mike but you don't necessarily have to forget. Since if you forget it will come back ten times as hard the next day. In various forms, but especially in feelings of guilt. Imagine drinking this bottle with all its consequences. What if you walk with your drunk mind to our little girl? What if you lift her up and she falls? In the morning, Mr. doesn't know anything anymore, but he also doesn't look at his sweet innocent girl. How do you feel then Mike?*

*Escape from a difficult time for a few hours followed by a lifetime of guilt.*

"But, but..."

"No Mike that can happen to anyone you to me anyone. I don't want anyone to be the perfect father. You just lie on the floor in her room last night to protect her. And now what are you doing now? You betray yourself with this Mike. Mikey think about about something else now man.

Yes, I now aim Aims sorry Aims. Man am I glad that I have you as a leader in a dark hopeless existence.

*What do you think Mike you're not alone! You have me Justin Francis Chantal and even Bud. You have more than anyone.*

***You have more than god you Are God. You've been put through the wringer and you're still doing your best Mike, not to become like them. And you are doing well, but from now on, stay away with unknown grapples from unknown whiskey. Especially whiskey without origin.***

Maikel says quietly, "Yes, I will Aims." Amy sees Bud standing as they walk out of the kitchen. He is restless. And she shakes her head at the guilty Bud. Maikel sits down on the couch and hears that beautiful song passing by on the radio tears of the fallen. He immediately thinks of what Amy just said to him. And he agrees with all his heart. He does not change his mind for a moment and immediately after the last two sentences of the song walk toward his little girl. He picks her up and promises, "Girl I won't drink a drop from you for this one." Chantal laughs and says: *Daddy sweet, Daddy the best.* Maikel says: Yes Tallie I am doing my best.

Really, I do my best for you. In order not to become like my dad. I'm doing my best and I don't drink a drop; I promise. Even though from now on I work as a bartender. And believe me, girl that will be difficult. Especially since it is offered to me forty times a day. But I say no to the booze for you. And I keep saying no for you. Mom is right and I stick to it. *Even my own father is right*, he whispers.

When he sits down on the sofa with the last bit of coffee and thinks about his sins. He knows deep down that this is not the way. And he realizes that those black parasites in the wall no longer affect him. He thinks to himself will there also be a view option that I might be able to see inside that wall? That wall near the coat rack is the first. I am quite curious about what those black things are. He stands by the coat rack and focuses his gaze on the wall. He blinks to find the right option, but no matter how much he blinks, he fails. He thinks in a split second crow! Help spiritual leader. And hears the soft voice of the Spanish woman say in his head again: ***Fitheach Cosanta!*** When he says it out, he hears that heavy whisper demonic voice again.

**Maikel you can never keep your promise. You get a lot of help but that is also lost in time. One day I will have you Judass. You are made to destroy your life and all the lives that get in the way. One day I will have you Judass. You will see it and the rest with you. The resst with you.**

Maikel no longer understands himself. At least no more than before. He never understood or was able to understand himself. As his mother used to say:

*Look at your father and judge for yourself.*

But he now sees himself as his father. A man-made up of empty promises. He hasn't promised Chantal yet: I don't drink a drop anymore, and the craving for the booze just comes up again. As if he hadn't made enough mistakes by that damn booze and stupid drugs. He must and will forget the past. But not in this way. **Never again not this way.** Chantal will grow up as a normal child in a normal house. With normal parents. Not like him and not like Aims either. Aims poor Aims so young and then lead such a life. Her mother blaming her father and her father.... No better than my father he thinks. But why did mine come to warn me. I can judge him very easily. Because it is simply the greatest evil in this world. A man who does everything he can to take away the innocence of the child. Do everything possible to stop his mother from believing in God. But in our family, God was the only one who could forgive. And Aims can talk about that. What a wicked existence she had. Where mine was very based to rely too much on God. But Aims has learned to forgive itself. But why doesn't she forgive herself? She even forgives everyone her weak excuse of a father and a false mother an attention-seeking woman. She forgives her former neighborhood for backward gossip.

In the long run, there are only two people she simply cannot forgive, which is in the first place herself for some reason. And that is her worst recurring nightmare. Koos the boogeyman for her. But as good as Aims, he believes she could even forgive him.

Everyone except herself. That reminds him of what she just said to him. You are God. But no Aims You are God; you are the greatest light on this globe because you can forgive! All by yourself! Something I could never do. I can't even forget... He thinks my father would have thought that way too? That's why he did so much to me? That's why he did so much to my mother? Because he just couldn't live with himself after his fraught life? Is that it, should I forgive my father? He thinks **never**, not without an explanation. What I cannot understand at all is that his dagger was used in that church for some kind of blood sacrifice. Yes, that is also the crow leader. The yellow eyes. The green eyes. the inexplicable and the incredible coincidences. What is it with that convenience store. He thinks I'm glad we have a supply and that Aims no longer have to go there. His head is overflowing with thoughts. Thoughts like what if and how then? Prominent thoughts. Questions to which he has no answer. Questions to which an answer may or will never come. Those are the worst you keep walking with. He collapses under the coat rack of a flooded head full of thoughts and questions. He lies there, a bit sad, clapping his hands over his ears.

He shouts:

**GET OUT, GET OUT, GOD OUT!** *I don't know, I don't know, I don't know anymore. Sorry Sorry sorry!*

That's all that comes out of his mouth right now. Just sorry. When Amy finds him through a crying pointing Chantal, she asks if he knows where he is. Maikel says again in a soft voice:



*I don't know, I don't know, I don't know.*

Amy says Mike I told you to loosen your caps. You are a good man, a gullible good man. And you want to work as a bartender? You don't know two glasses of whiskey yet. Two glasses of Mike and look at yourself. Maikel can only say:

*Sorry Sorry sorry.*

**Yes, I don't buy anything for that idiot What's in it for me? It is a stupid stupid word, idiot. We don't have a shit, do we? We need Maikel, not a little child who is already there. That dirty serpent from a mutilated mess. What a snake that mutilated kid is.**

Maikel comes back to herself through Amy's angry words. "It's my own fault. Not Bud's, Bud meant well. I drank it too soon, it's my fault."

**Mike do you know what was inside? Then you are worthy of a bartender!**

Maikel answer shocked: No Aims that, I don't know. Maikel has never seen her like this. As angry as now furious against the limit of aggressive or even over it. Maikel cringes and tries to make it right for Bud. But Amy doesn't want to hear about it: "Either he out or we out!" Maikel always resolved that if she let him choose, he wouldn't choose her.

But this time it is different, he agrees with her, but he cannot forgive himself if buddy becomes the prey of the predators outside. He tries scared to ask Amy: *Aims can't you give him another chance a chance on your terms? On none other than your terms?*

"On my terms?"

Maikel: Yes, only on your terms. Amy looks at Bud with the biggest eyes yet. Her eyes turn purple. They are gigantic and they look like they are on fire. As if there is a forest on fire. She has developed pure hatred towards Bud and Maikel thinks what have I done? Amy immediately grabs Bud in the collar and throws him into the basement with the words: **This Is Your Punishment.** Bud struggles well, but Amy slams the cellar door with a bang and locks it stronger than ever. Bud's screams his screams go through the bonemarrow.

While she doesn't mind for a second. In any way, she walks into the kitchen to Francis and Justin. To say, that has finally been resolved. Maikel remains scared under the coat rack and feels guilty for Amy's decision. But he's not going to unlock the door. I don't think he does. Bud screams more and more and it goes through Maikel's mind hey Aims is right. He screams he screams, he bangs and kicks. The banging and kicking can be explained. But what about that screaming and screaming? The same as twice in the car, Bud developed talk again. Something is wrong but what? I have never seen Aims so angry. She could have killed him and then just continue with her daily activities. Amy walks up to him with the words: Hey Mike are you going out there or is that?

He can smell you... Snakes smell with their tongue, or didn't you know? Maikel is unable to give an posture. He thinks I feel guilty because of me he is sitting there. But I understand Amy after he was thrown in the basement he changed. Different from normal. Bud lets out a little scream and then it is quiet. The whole house is silent. Except for his thoughts that let his head overflow. He also understands that Bud is weird. But Bud has a past. Just like the rest of those kids in the basement of that church. He tries to block his thoughts with the thought that it is probably not my business. He quietly asks Aims what time is it? When Amy looks at her watch, she says it's 12:30 Mike. When Maikel thinks what goes fast that time today, the silence in the house changes immediately. Justin and Francis argue with each other and scold to each other with words that Maikel never wants to hear. Justin has nothing to say but something in the joking atmosphere. And Francis is unhappy with that. While Amy can laugh very heartily about that. She gets a bit of a sinister smile. Such a smile that you will encounter in a horror film. Sinister shrill and soft which later progresses to very hard and in an unbreakable cycle. As if a criminally insane smile is being repeated on an old mono radio. Maikel walks very frightened of his children who are able to kill each other. Amy gently chases him with every step he takes. When he speaks to his children about their behavior, he sees that his children have suffered the same kinds of injuries as Bud somewhere. They look exactly the same. Justin's right eye hangs from a muscle in his eye socket. Francis has a bloodied spoon in his hand. With which he walks to Chantal with his mutilated face. Maikel tackles him before he can reach his little girl. He takes his spoon making Francis angry, and starts beating him. But this blow doesn't come as a dull bang.

Maikel feels this very well and Francis pushes Maikel away from him. Francis picks up the spoon and asks in a screaming tone:

**Is it okay mom?**

Amy still in her psychotic smile says:

**Yes, son you can. Everyone should come to us at the bottom, everyone!**

She looks at Maikel aggressively with those big bright purple eyes. Justin screams something in an unintelligible tone and language. Francis walks over to the playing Chantal. When he puts the spoon on her eye socket and looks at Maikel with the same eyes Amy has, he says softly screaming:

***Tallie beautiful eyes!***

Maikel is just in time and beats Francis on his sleep. Francis's head deformed completely from the blow. Maikel screams: **STAY AWAY FROM YOUR SISTER!** Francis walks towards Maikel with the deformed head, and Maikel sees that his braincase is broken in his crooked skull.

He says: **Then I'll take you basterd. Mom are you helping for second?**

Francis and Amy walk towards Maikel like two living dead, Maikel can't get away from them.

And while Amy is holding Maikel with a firm grip, Francis places the spoon on Maikel's left eye on his eye socket.

Maikel tries to get out of Amy's grip but he can't. Every movement makes him weaker and weaker, and Amy says defiantly:

*Come on Alike come out. Come on Alikey then come on you can.*

But he does not succeed he falls unconscious from the resistance in Amy's arms. He hears Amy's last words: **marbh**. And closes his eyes. When he comes to, he sits at a table in the Irish pub. He opens his eyes and the first he sees is Petrus who tells him that he was found unconscious in his house. And that he had someone look for him because he had not yet arrived at work at 9 p.m. He asks the confused Maikel: "You didn't think I let myself down so easily, did you? You've had a party like few had I see in your head and your hand." Maikel asks confused, "What are you talking about?" Petrus says happily: **Boys, he has caught such a shitbag**. At which the regulars all yell and Maikel wakes up with the noise. He says panickily: **Me girl me girl!** Petrus says in a calm tone: *Calm down, but she's okay*. Maikel asks: "Hey what, what do you mean what do you mean? What kind of man who?" Petrus lifts Maikel's right hand and asks: "Don't you remember anything about this?" Maikel answer: "Yes, that was a big black dog shape with my baby's bed..."

Petrus says in a soft tone.

*Chantal... It won't be boys no, right?*

The regulars are still euphoric of the news in unison: **Every challenge is a challenge, every warning is a warning, every obstacle must be removed!**

**Not with a baby!**

Maikel asks: "What's going on, can you tell me?" Petrus answer:

"**NAMTILLAKU** that's going on!" Maikel asks: "Who or what is that?" Petrus: "**NAMTILLAKU** is a demon which include can bring the dead back to life. Have you ever come across one Mike?" Maikel: "Yes my father!" PETRUS: "**NAMTILLAKU**"s symbol is used in summoning the dead and fallen soldiers."

Maikel takes his phone out of his pocket and asks: "This symbol?" He shows it to Petrus, Petrus sees nothing and asks: "What do you see Mike? Where was that taken?" Maikel: "A kind of fence with a point of an arrow and a ball at the ends. And he was taken in my basement."

Petrus: "And you just see that, you see that as if nothing else is going on?" Maikel: "Yes, I see that yes!" The regulars start to shout:

***Fitheach Cosanta, Fitheach Cosanta, Fitheach Cosanta!***

Petrus: "He is among us: he is finally there after thirty years of absence!"

Petrus looks intently at Maikel and says:

*The Irish call him: Fitheach Cosanta. The Celtic scots call him: Suil Uile-fhaicsinneach. And he's the fallen soldier the: An saighdiui tite. And he has as the Basque people call it: Begirada suntsizaile guztiak. The all-devastating look. The legend of the Fitheach Cosanta is the following: he is a protector for the fallen soldier's, so the An saighdiuir tite. In other words, the fallen soldier. The Fitheach Cosanta, which literally means protective raven, made sure that the soul of the An saighdiuir tite went to the most suitable place. Sometimes he put the soul back because there was no place to be found. He sees everything with a look called: Begirada suntsizaile guztiak also called the all-devastating look. With which he let kings die in flames. With which he could destroy demons in a blink full of light. With which he could banish angels to hell. With which he could see everything, including what was hidden from the human eye. And people can be mistaken in its power to overcome the power of everything by putting enemies together.*

*And by his lonesome he was even invincible against a superpower of enemies. And you have it in your Mike I see it in your eyes. I see his fire burning in your eyes. I see how we have called him "the spiritual crow leader." You have it in your Mikey and after thirty years of losing my soldier's in a hopeless battle: I am confident that you can help us to victory. You and the fitcheach cosanta within you.*

Petrus looks at the regulars and says: *he is back.*

To which the regulars all drink and yell at the same toast. Maikel: "You're welcome!" But don't know what to do with this.

Then Petrus comes to his side with an old-fashioned tin mug and says: "We should toast to that, Mikey!" But Maikel says: "Thank you kindly, but I'll skip this round. He says you can explain to me what *An Tsochái* means. " Petrus laughs, "That's a secret."

Maikel looks at him questionably and asks: "What is happening now is also a secret, isn't it?" Petrus nods, "Okay if you really want to know. *An Tsochái* means the society. That's Irish. " Maikel: "But Irish is English, isn't it?" Petrus answers: "There were and are also real Irishmen Mike..." Maikel apologizes immediately. But Petrus says: "I only accept your apologies through a toast to a better time."

Maikel looks at the tin mug and says: "I really can't do it, man. I promised my daughter something. Oh, fuck my girl where is my girl? Do you have her? "

Petrus: "Come along, Mike." Maikel walks along in the garden the sun shines there while it was dark outside. Maikel disoriented asks: "Is she here, is Tallie here?" Petrus: "Walk into the shed, Mikey." Maikel stumbles into the small shed and sees his daughter lying quietly in an old-fashioned manger.

Petrus: "This was mine, my parents used to be religious. I had nothing else but it is enough. " Maikel immediately checks whether both her beautiful eyes are still in her sockets. And takes a sigh of relief. He says: "I don't care if your parents were religious whether it's you or even if you're an alien. But this man this, thank you!"



Petrus: "I had a suspicion. You could stay here with her, this shed is a bit small, but everything you need is a second away. Or you could go home again."

Maikel interrupts him immediately: My house is cursed. And that's because of a man named Tom who has released black parasites into my house, and who live in my wall now. And then I think I have that one named **Namtillaku** that puts everyone against each other. And apparently, it's all that matters in my house.

**That is my house**, and he has to get out. Same as those weird black things on my wall. My house, my new house cursed, haunted for me part it haunts there. That thing is a living horror movie.

Petrus laughs and says myths and legends started somewhere Mike. And it sounds like you have three myths and legends in your house. The first is a Sumerian myth called: Etana and the second Namtillaku, has a close bond with then first, while the third has a close bond with one and two.

### *Etana*

*A long time ago there were two creatures. A snake and an eagle connected in friendship. And closed a bond with each other in loyalty. Both the snake and the eagle had young children. But the eagle was so hungry that he ate the children of the snake. After a long agony and as the last hope, the snake searches Utu the sun god who advises her to lure the eagle into a trap. By hiding itself in the carcass of a strong ox. And wait for the bird to approach and then grab it.*

*No sooner said than done they fought and the snake maimed the eagle so that it can no longer fly or stand. And then she throws the eagle into a well. At that point, Etana the king of Kish appears. He longs for a son. For this, he consults Utu the sun god. Who is also called to the rescue by the eagle.*

*He thought I will make a single solution out of two desires and two questions. Utu tells Etana that the solution would be to find the fertile tree of life. Which is in the upper world where it is all gods dwell. To be able to father a son. But to enter this place inaccessible to mortals, Utu advises him to take the eagle out of its well and to care for its wounds. And then ask him for help in looking for the fertile tree of life. The eagle does not want to help him at first. After long begging from Etana he says yes. After a long supplication on the back of the healed eagle, Etana flies to the above world. After a long flight, he no longer even sees the water and the earth below him. When he gets there. He meets the woman of women, the goddess of femininity. To whom he asks the gift of the fertile tree of life. She agrees. With the gift of fertility, Etana can secure offspring. Etana did indeed have a son as a successor. Unfortunately, the son was as mutilated as the eagle was. So mutilated that Etana was ashamed of his son. And thanks to **NAMTILLAKU** to **summon** the demon. He decides to give eternal life. The greatest hell that can exist for everyone. But before **NAMTILLAKU** wanted to do that, Etana had to cut his son's tongue out of his mouth. So that the secret was protected forever. The legend tells by people that time has passed, and perhaps even forgotten that: The son of Etana is still in the realm of the living to this day. But still as old as when he was cursed.*

*And the legend is that those parasites you are talking about are your only chance of survival. If he decides to die, part of the world will perish. So, for the preservation of the world, it has lived on for centuries and centuries. With the only chance of survival that eats black parasites, which looks suspiciously like the snake that mutilated the eagle.*

The Greeks called them vdella. The Romans called them: sanguisuga. The English: leech. And we Dutch call them: bloedzuigers. He has to eat the leeches to keep his body pure. The living leeches he eats and are also in your wall. Stop his aging process in many ways. Because they eat the dead cells in his body, which keeps his body young and vital. He must do this at least three times a week.

Maikel asks: "But leeches need water to survive, right?"

Petrus: "Not all of that scares me! Since leeches can also survive in the Egyptian desert. And can even reproduce. With the knowledge that they are small thin parasites, I fear the latter. For example, you also get delusions of it as if you have a Fata Morgana in the desert." But to finish the story. What the Sumerian people believed in was that there were three worlds.

*Actually, the same as faith now. At the top, you have called the above world, the earth where most life takes place called between world, and at the bottom of the realm of the dead called the lower world or Aralu. The son of Etana was supposed to go to the above world heaven.*

*But because of the long life he has already led in the in-between world, when he finally dies, he has to go to the inferior world or Aralu. And due to the deal that Etana has made with **NAMTILLAKU**, the son ends up in the greatest emptiness. I myself think the prodigal wants to live and suffer just to have something. The void is the worst death you can get. Since you happen to have those leeches in your house. And the symbol of **NAMTILLAKU** in your basement, I think you have already met the child. And that the child is now trying to **reverse** the curse on the demon **NAMTILLAKU**. By calling him using the seal. In other words, the symbol in your basement.*

Maikel asks: "Why me?" Petrus: "That is a good question. Maybe you can save the boy with the light of the Fitheach Cosanta." Maikel looks difficult and asks: "Save from what?" Petrus: "That is a question that only the Fitheach Cosanta can answer... only the Fitheach Cosanta can see what needs to be done. This may mean that the boy has to die after his long agony. But it can also mean that he has to live. Or that the curse of Etana and **NAMTILLAKU** is lifted.

Either way, the Fitheach Cosanta knows what to do. But then you have to go home now! " Maikel: "But I'm so comfortable here, it's so nice and quiet here. I don't want to leave at all!" Petrus asks:

"What about Amy Justin and Francis? Do you know where Chantal is?"

Maikel says confused: "Amy of course just Fran and Tallie..." Petrus: "It doesn't matter Mike that effect has this place on you.

If you pick up Chantal from the garden, I will get you a lift home from the troops!" The only thing that goes through Maikel's head is that he helped Petrus cremate someone in the garden. But if Petrus says Chantal is there, shouldn't it? And he walks to the garden. Immediately when he is in the garden, he is blinded by the bright sun that shines low in the sky. he puts his hands to his eyes and goes looking for Chantal. He walks a bit in circles around the old pyre. And disoriented from the sun that shines so late, no longer knows where to go. Then he hears his grandfather's old grandfather clock again. And he's just as afraid of it as he used to be. Those hard banging of that clock. What thundered so hard in his thoughts. When he has counted all the thumps again, he ends up with six pieces. And he realizes that there is something about the six. But what was that? Then he hears his mother's voice again. Who orders him to think. She says:

*Thinking Alike and learning from your mistakes. Thinking Alike please think good after. And never repeat your mistake again.*

Maikel says sadly with tears in his eyes: I'm sorry Mom, I'm sorry, I knew you loved that man very much. But I couldn't be more mom. His mother says calmly in his busy head:

*Alikey, I'm not talking about that, that man deserved what you did!*

*But Mike think what else have you done*

# Chapter VI.

## *Dead Rhythm.*

Maikel is no more confused than ever. Then the heavy voice says: "Drugs iss nice Mike." With his hands over his ears, Maikel screams, "Get out of my head! I'll fuck you up, you poisoner! Get out, please get out..." Petrus walks up to Maikel and says: "Mike, it's worse than expected. **NAMTILLAKU** has you in its power. How did it come to this? This is the only holy place in the village. And he still speaks to you. This is the only sacred ground. And he still manages to avoid it. Mike, you've let him in! That's why you have the power of the Fitheach Cosanta." Maikel looks at Petrus with white eyes whiter than ever with a small black dot. The black dot hides a sea of flames. But when Petrus wants to say fitheach cosa... He is interrupted by yellow-green eyes that look at him as if he could go up in flames at any moment. Petrus: "Okay, I'm leaving." As Petrus walks away, he hears the crows screeching in the background. And when he is inside, he sees dozens of blackbirds sitting in front of his pub. They seem to scream:

**GET OUT! GET OUT! COME NO, GET OUT DICK!**

Petrus becomes more and more afraid of the screaming screaming crows.

Who all look at him as if they want to put them out of his misery. Hundreds of eyes gleaming in the dark street, following him everywhere. It doesn't matter where he walks or where he sits, the eyes follow him everywhere. The crow's head doesn't move. But he sees the hundreds of shiny eyes following him everywhere. Petrus says to the regulars: "boys this can go wrong any given time. But the light in Mike is strong." Just when Maikel walks in and slams the door shut with a bang. **Hi, guys there I am...** He smiles at Petrus and the regulars: **What happened now?** When Petrus looks out into the garden, he sees the stake burn down to ashes all over again. He runs outside with the words:

***NO NO, NOT A BABY NO!***

Maikel asks the regulars: "What is bothering him? Well, who cares about me a lift home?" A frightened man emerges: "I'll do that, Mike!"

Maikel: "We have not yet been able to get to know who are you?"  
The frightened man answer: "Dennis!" Maikel shakes his hand:

"Pleasant to meet you I'm Maikel Dennis." Dennis laughs and asks: "Where do you live Maikel?"

Maikel answers with a question:

***The more people run, the further they get from their  
destination...***

"Do you know where you're going, Dennis?" Dennis more afraid than ever: "No you still have given me no address." Maikel laughs: "I'll tell you when we get there." Immediately when Maikel and Dennis walk out the door, Petrus enters the pub again with the words: *fortunately, not boys*. The regulars breathe a sigh of relief and say: *This time it will be very difficult*. Petrus: "Yes, I now also have that, but the Fitheach Cosanta is strong." The regulars all shout in unison:

***Fitheach Cosanta, Fitheach Cosanta, Fitheach Cosanta...***

Petrus: "Guys not now, I don't feel like partying." Then Petrus hears a car door slamming and again, the car drives away. Has he heard everything? When Petrus looks outside, all the crows are gone. And even the sun in the oh-so-green illuminated garden has gone out. Dennis turns on the car radio and Maikel hears that song again, which the old-fashioned jukebox also played.

Maikel asks at the intro: "This song is beautiful, but who does it belong to?" Dennis answer: from a strange guy called:

***"The alfa ."***

Maikel: "Dennis turn it up, man." When the text starts. The car vibrates with how loud the music is. Maikel is completely in it. Together with the smiling Chantal in the back seat.

*Moonlight on the open road. My own drink in my bottle. I'm on my way to the endless possibilities on my bike.*



*When I see the devil out of nowhere. The lord doesn't want to forgive me. I make the devil tremble. I cannot forget the injustice. Out my way while I reassemble.*

*No way back. Not an endless flight. No burden on my shoulders. Shadows have my back. Hate my parents. Fast forward no more thinking. Fast forward to the fight.*

*No more thinking about the past. Dreaming for the future. But live in the present. People hear people talk. People see people should leave me alone. People walk on an illuminated road. I'm on trial through the darkness further on.*

*No idea what's going on. I have no idea if I will make it or not. No idea what to do.*

*No idea what's going on. Wherever I walk wherever I stand. I leave my mark everywhere cause I stand alone.*

*I'm a guy you don't forget. I am a real trouble magnet. I have been alone for more than my whole life. As a little boy with the best intentions betrayed. People don't watch and people don't listen, people talk.*

*Everyone knows better to judge. they are at a disadvantage because it gives us the benefits.*

*People don't know anything, people know everything. People are blind but see. People are deaf but hear.*

*I see but am blind. I hear but I am deaf. I know everything  
but meanwhile nothing.*

Immediately when they arrive in the street, Maikel says: "Number 99, please!" Dennis sees the song that looks a lot more like number 999 in the dark. Dennis looks at the song again confused by the darkness of the evening. The song that seems to whisper to him *go away, go away*. He hears someone screaming **666 999**. In a moment he quickly gives Maikel his first wages: "Petrus would have liked this."

Maikel takes it up and asks: "Do you have any idea what time it is?"

Dennis: "You have a watch on your own!" Maikel: "See for yourself what it says." Then Dennis sees that the digital watch is at 06:00.

Dennis: 23.58, it's 23.58! Maikel: "Thank you for the lift and the wages, even though I didn't earn it." He shakes Dennis's hand and takes Chantal from the back seat. When he walks into his house after waving to Dennis, he hears a heavy clock hitting the same clock as his grandfather's. The clock strikes twelve times. He just sees Amy sitting quietly in front of the TV with the curtains closed. Amy: Mike you had a breakdown or something. I didn't want you to leave at all, but someone picked you up because you were late. I couldn't do anything, Mike! And the man said he could make you better. He even invited me to the pub. But I can't do that to Justin and Francis. You only wanted to come with him if you could take Chantal. And the gentleman allowed that." Maikel sees flashes of what had happened and asks: "Aims how is Fran doing?"

Amy says: He's sleeping, Mike. He had a good meal and then went to bed." "And Bud?" "All is well Mike" Maikel: "Okay now we are going to watch TV. After looking at Francis. And putting Chantal in bed. " Amy: It's all right Mike. I'm glad you're doing well." When Maikel walks upstairs with Chantal in his arms, he hears the TV laughing behind him. He looks back and, like before, starts to become suspicious. He doubts everything. This cannot be true, he thinks, when he goes upstairs. Every time a little more frightened he walks up the stairs. Until suspicious and afraid turned into pure aggression. He puts Chantal in bed. Says goodnight girl kisses her and walks over to Francis's room. He immediately checks whether his head is still intact. And wakes him up by the aggressive manically feeling. Francis looks at Maikel and says good morning to Dad. Maikel asks: "How's Justin?" "Everything is going well here, Dad." Reply Francis sleepily. Maikel says confused, "Now go on but sleep again, boy." Kisses him. And walks to Justin's room. But can see with a simple look that Justin is not wrong. And after he kisses Justin. he walks down again. Maikel walks gently down the stairs. He tries not to make any noise as he walks down the creaky wooden steps. A dark atmosphere begins to form when Maikel tells about his day. Amy diligently listens to Maikel's stories. About the incident with Bud and of course his family. About how he came to the pub, and that they received him in the pub like a bird with a broken leg. He shows Amy his wages and she immediately asks: "Is this legal Mike?" "I honestly don't care, we have enough for a few days now!" Amy nods:

"Mike I'm going to bed now." Maikel gives her a hug: "I'll follow!" "Okay, Mike." is the answer when Amy walks upstairs.

He hears the TV and the radio cheering together. He is shocked by how loud the volume is. But when he tries to turn down the volume, a shape comes into his TV. And the shape looks at him. Maikel sees eyes in the black silhouette. The eyes of his mother are those beautiful green eyes, which fade the garden of the Irish pub. The figure says: *Mike te amo*. Maikel says I love you too mom... The figure says:

*Et hoc modo videtur de eo.*

Maikel asks to think about what mom?

He does not hear the words in his head through the TV or radio but in his head. The shape slowly disappears. He sees his mother slowly disappearing from the TV. As if a cigarette is burning and the smoke is looking to get away. Maikel immediately gets a craving for a cigarette. And he says no to himself. We're not going to do that! But it is very tasty. Now it is! No, I'm going to bed, I'm going to Aims. When he goes upstairs, he hears the radio say **goodnight Mikey**. He says good night and goes to bed. It is 4:00 am when he finally falls asleep. But at that moment there is a loud knock on the door. Maikel sees that Amy is still asleep, snoring.

He thinks Aims when it is important, they will come back, and turn around again. But knocked turned into banging. Maikel thinks yes here we go. Until he hears someone trying to get in. He hears fumbling at the back door and kicking at his front door. He walks down the stairs like he just taught himself. And grabs the meat hook from the heating pipe at the front door.

He walks to the back door with it but when he opens the back door, he sees that there is no one. But he still hears the fidgeting. He thinks those idiots are now at the front door just wait. And walks through the back door to the front door. He first locks the back door before walking to the front door with the meat hook. But when he arrives at the front door, nobody is there. So, he decides to keep watch. At that point, the cold cuts through his flannel pajamas as if he's in a freezer. But there is nothing to be found except cold in the black night. The street lamps were not turned on tonight. He does not see a hand. And tries again to appeal to the crow leader. He blinks, and there is his sight again. He now thinks of thinking up something for this cold. When he hears a child crying.

*Don't worry boy I'll help you! I help you! I kill them!*

He runs to the crying child.

But the closer he thinks he gets, the further away from the crying sounds he finds himself. Somewhere at a remote intersection. No idea how he got there or how he got back home. Only the child goes through his head. Only I have to help that child. He does not cross the intersection. Then he sees two yellow eyes looking at him in the distance. He can't stop running, even if he doesn't make it across the intersection, and he is afraid of what is hidden in the black night. The eyes keep getting closer, with every step that Maikel runs. Until they are right in front of him. Maikel is still running, looking scared at the reproachful yellow eyes. He cannot hit them. For they are too far away for that. He hears the same heavy voice that says: **You can't save them, Mikey...**

The voice gets closer and closer until the reproachful yellow eyes disappear. And the voice alone remains at the much too dark black crossroads. That heavy voice. That demonic voice that continues to haunt him. He used to only hear in his nightmares. Those nightmares about his father, those nightmares filled with powerlessness. Nothing but powerlessness. The same feeling as he has now. That damn powerlessness, the worst feeling he knows. He has to wake up but how? He must wake up! He must! Then the voice starts to speak again, he says:

**Give it up to Mikes. Just give up the fight. You cannot win. You only win when you are dead...**

**NO NEVER! I DO NOT GIVE UP! NEVER!**

**Mikey Mike, who is going to miss you, no one?**

**With every word the voice speaks, the powerlessness gets worse and worse.**

**You are never here for your family... You will die alone... There is no one missing you! If you are no longer there, they will celebrate.**

***Nobody misses you.***

He goes crazy screaming and starts waving his fists and kicking his legs. But all he can hit is air. He thinks I have to wake up, I have to! This must be a nightmare. Then he sees Justin and Francis with Chantal in their hands. Maikel screams:

## **NO, YOU ARE NOT REAL!**

The boys begin to stroke Chantal. Justin has her arms and Francis has her legs. Justin tickles her hands while Francis tickles her feet. They look at Maikel at the same time and both say at the same time:

*Dad we are not going to miss you... We are happy when you are gone...*

## **DAD, WE WILL NOT MISS YOU, YOU HAVE NEVER BEEN THERE FOR US.**

They get the same yellow eyes as just before him. In that reproachful look. This is a night of powerlessness: He thinks to himself. Just then, Justin and Francis are both pulling Chantal. One on her arms and the other on her legs. Chantal screams and falls to the ground in two pieces. While she hits the ground, Maikel wakes up screaming in his bed. And don't know where he is. Still tired of running. He immediately looks at Chantal. And when she is not in bed, he panics. He gets a panic attack. Looking for his daughter. He runs around the house like a hyperventilating headless chicken. Only when he comes into the kitchen does he relax a bit, when he sees Chantal playing on her blanket on the ground.

## *Day V.*

Still gasping thinking the world is after him, he sits down at the counter. And he takes a glass of water. He chokes on it almost immediately when he takes a sip. Amy comes over and holds him quietly, she says: "Mike, everything will be all right."

Maikel cannot say a sensible word. Only **Chantal comes out dead and Tallie broken**. Amy: Mike look, there she is! There she sits Mike! " Maikel: **Yes, yes yes Tallie is sitting there but just and Fran broke her**.

Amy laughs and asks: "Had a nightmare, Mike?" **Yes, yes** answers Maikel. While the screaming Chantal is still in his head. He is shown flashes by Justin and Francis. Flashes about how they eat his little girl piece by piece. First her little fingers and toes, then they transition to her arms and legs, and finally, they work towards her intestines. When Justin eats her heart and Francis starts eating her guts, Maikel wakes up and sees his little girl playing in the kitchen. He grasps her gasping for breath and says: panting, "You're okay, you're okay, you're okay. Girl what happens" Chantal babbles again and grabs his nose firmly. Which causes Maikel to have a big laugh. Justin comes down and walks over to Maikel and Chantal. But when he is a hair's length from Chantal, Maikel turns away scared with Chantal in his arms. When Maikel walks into the living room with Chantal, he sees Francis sitting in front of the TV. When he walks into the hall with her, he hears a dog panting. When he looks back, he sees Bud standing. Right at the back of the hallway. "Well, Tallie, we don't have time for each other, do we?" He takes her back to her blanket in the kitchen. Amy: Are you all right Mike? Maikel puts his thumb up and smiles at her. Amy: Nice, so I'm going to do some shopping, do you want something special?



Maikel shakes no and sits down with Francis in front of the TV. He is watching a weird game show. Where people meet and ask each other about their nightmares. It is about two people in general and the fears of each other. The woman's name is Dinie and the man's name is Jan Willem. Dinie and Jan Willem meet in church. You could also see that those were of those stereotypical older people. Who never talk "wrongly" about each other or others. And Maikel laughs. Francis silences him by means of a deflated tire (SST). Dinie is a farmer's wife while Jan Willem was a city dweller. But faith has bound them, according to Dinie. And she exposes her childhood to Jan Willem. She is talking about a dog and a snake. And that she was almost tempted by that dog to keep that snake. But if Jan Willem laughs and asks why that? She cries: Jan keeps your mouth shut. Jan Willem decides to keep his mouth shut. Maikel hears Jan thinking pffft what an arrogant woman. And Maikel tries to hold back his smile. Dinie explains that that "dog" is a metaphor for life and that "snake" is a metaphor for death. If Jan Willem says yes woman now I don't understand a word anymore... Maikel stops holding back and howls like a wolf laughing.

Dinie says I don't want to be treated like that by a city dweller who doesn't understand the world. And angrily walks out of the studio. Then come the commercials. And the first commercial is that of that toy, an action figure or something. With the text: With your new buddy you will have the time of your life. And Francis looks around scared.

When Francis finds out that Bud is behind the couch, he jumps up startled. And he asks: "Every time ... why me Bud?" Bud laughs and when Francis sees Bud's teeth through the open cheeks of his face. Francis runs away with the words:

"Get your head out of your ass!" But Bud does not take it seriously and sits down next to Maikel, who is still crooked with laughter. About that oh so peacefully believing old people. Bud tries to keep his mouth shut but can't help but open. A thin leech comes out. Maikel immediately pulls that thing when he sees it coming from Bud's mouth. But the leech is stuck. Maikel pulls and then pulls even harder. The leech gets longer and longer until it bursts. The small intestines form a tongue in Bud's mouth. Bud's mouth starts to heal and he starts to get his tongue back. Maikel watches the spectacle in disbelief. Bud says: "Mike, please smear the beast on my tongue."

Maikel does what Bud tells him to do. And to his great surprise, Bud regains his normal mouth. Bud: "You should be getting answers right now, Mike!"

### *Namtillaku?*

Bud: "Yeah I don't want to hurt you and your kids even Amy, but then I have to keep eating these things or I will get aggressive." Maikel interrupts, saying: "Buddy do you want to live, or do you want to die?"

"When I die, part of the world will die. so, I want to live, although it is no fun to always be seven! "

"Are you sure buddy?"

"Yes, there is nothing else left dad."

"Okay if you're sure and won't use it on me!"

### **Never!**

Bud walks back to the basement and down the basement stairs. Maikel continues to watch TV for a while, still fascinated by what he just saw until Amy pats him on the shoulder and says: "Mike, I'm going shopping."

"I'm going with you Aims." "Oh, nice Mike then we can take a bit more with us." "Yes Aims, but we'll take Chantal with us." Amy thinks about it for a moment: "Yes, good Mike." Amy takes Chantal and Maikel walks to the car. When Maikel arrives at the car, he sees his father standing again. He changes that is because of those bloodsuckers. Those leeches show me strange things, he thinks to himself. His father says: "**Mike stop! Mikey stop!**" But Maikel walks on and opens the door, sits down, puts the key in the keyhole, and makes contact. Then Amy comes out with Chantal and sees the same man. She stops and says gently, "Hello, sir, who are you? We haven't met yet. I'm Amy." And she puts Chantal in the child seat. The man walks over to Amy and taps her on the shoulder.

Amy looks at him reluctantly and extends her hand slightly frightened. She says Amy pleasantly. Maikel shouts:

**AIMS COME IN NOW! NOW!**

The crows start to screech, call, and warn. But Amy doesn't listen but when Maikel gets out of the car to get her. His father has her hand and smells it once. He says: "Hot meat, hot frightened meat." And takes a bite in her hand.

Amy does not see a normal set of teeth as the normal thirty that are in normal teeth. But maybe sixty and more, running from top to bottom, all the way down his throat. Amy screams: **LET ME GO! OLD DIRTY SNAKE!**

Maikel pulls Amy's hand away from the weak excuse of a father. He tries to hit him but to no avail. The blows go through him. "You can't even fight like a man. You dirty sissy. " He holds Amy and kisses her forehead. He says calmly, "I'll take you to the hospital. You need a tetanus syringe that is perilously contagious." He wraps a cloth around it. Amy: Do you know that man? Yes, meet my father. Amy looks at him with reproachful eyes. The same as from his nightmare, only a different color. That beautiful blue color but with a graying edge. "My father is dead Aims." "But I just saw him. Mike, he bit me. Look he bit me. " When she rolls the cloth open and shows her hand, the teeth that were pressed into it are gone. The whole bite wound is gone. Not a single tooth is in it, "Not one Mike. Not even one Mike, the teeth are gone."

He puts the car aside and takes another good look. "What's not right here Aims." "I don't know Mike, I don't know." He says to her I have four words for you:

**The power of perception.** What you perceive is so Aims. I have also experienced this with Justin. But why we both see the same thing is still a mystery to me. Maikel changes his mind and asks: Aims Think back what did you see? Amy: "A man, an old man. Who wouldn't talk or introduce himself. And when I wanted to give a hand, he bit my hand with an abnormal set of teeth. There were sixty to seventy little teeth in his rotten mouth." Maikel asks: "What are your biggest fears since childhood?" Amy doesn't even have to think:

"Rats and snakes mainly snakes. What a treacherous beast they are." Maikel: "Think about a snake and think about what just happened." Amy: "Why Mike, don't do no.." "Why don't you?"

"Okay, Mike okay." When Amy thinks back when she has her biggest fear in her mind.

She sees her shaking the man's hand, then opening his mouth unnaturally wide. He has two large fangs, and her entire arm is swallowed by the man. Then Amy opens her eyes again and says you're right Mike. Maikel answer:

*The power of perception!*

They drive past the supermarket and Amy says: "Stop Mike, stop." Maikel stops driving and parks the car on the sidewalk in front of a house opposite the supermarket. He gets out of the car and takes Chantal from the child seat. Amy quickly joins in. And the three of them walk into the supermarket. Amy takes a cart and Maikel puts Chantal in it. When they walk around the supermarket and grab bread, cheese, cold cuts, soda, potatoes, and vegetables. Chantal starts to whimper and sob." He asks what's wrong, girl?" Chantal points to a man standing in line. A man who is very familiar to Maikel. Maikel: "I see you girl!" And turns the cart around. Amy: Then I'll say hello. She walks to the man. Maikel tries to stop her. But changes his mind after what he just said to Amy in the car. He thinks to himself: the power of perception. And tries to contain his anger. The further away he is from the man, the happier Chantal becomes. He knows that too. He also says: "Thank you girl." And throws a plush dog in the cart. Chantal immediately starts playing with the dog. Maikel: It's not your monster, **monsterrrr** . Chantal laughs and presses on the dog, the dog makes a noise. Chantal is shocked and presses again. Again, the dog makes a noise wraf, Chantal laughs and keeps pressing.

When Chantal and Maikel press the dog together and they hear nothing but the barking dog. When Chantal also starts barking (Wroof Wraw Wroof Wroof Wraf) Maikel makes a howling sound just as the two start to really enjoy it, Maikel is tapped on his shoulder.

When Maikel looks back laughing he sees Tom standing with Amy. Then he hears on the speaker of the supermarket:

*You know him or you don't. You know him only through stories or you know him well. But everyone knows the lore. Everyone has their own stories to tell and soul to sell. **And everyone goes to the kingdom of hell, where he rules forevermore.***

Amy knows this song all too well. Whenever this song runs out, something happens. Maikel thinks I'm beating him up, here under the camera in this dirty grave store. But Tom says: "Sorry Maikel, it was not intended that way. I wish our second meeting had turned out differently." Tom's eyes show something different. They show that Tom is laying his guts out. Maikel must do everything in his power not to freak out in front of his little girl. Meanwhile, Chantal presses the dog again, wroof. And Maikel laughs. He thinks to himself thank you girl and shakes hands with Tom.

He says all right but don't put leeches in my house anymore. Tom looks at him, and the eyes betray him, he is afraid of Maikel. That gives Maikel a good feeling and squeezes his hand a little harder.

Tom's eyes narrow, and he explains that he had no choice. When Maikel asks why? He says: "I had to do it sorry. Otherwise, the damage would have been irreconcilable. He is already five thousand plus years old. What do you think would mean to the world, Mike?

Maikel answers his question with another question. "Who is Pope Tom?" Tom scratches his ear and says: "The only one in the same line as **NAMTILLAKU**. Nobody knows who it is or can be. Some say he died in a church service. Others say he was killed by a wolf. And other people say that he has been walking around our village all these five thousand years. Tom's eyes start to shed tears. And he says softly *Koos and I protect this village ...* but Amy interrupts. She says: "I don't want to hear that name again in my life!" She slaps Tom in the face with a flat hand. In a moment, Maikel feels pure pride flowing through him. Tom says: "I deserved that bitch slap. But girl Koos can never hurt you or anyone anymore, he is dead. He protected our church by wrapping it in a kind of camouflage. The camouflage of a building."

Maikel: "A mansion?" Chantal slaps the dog's crotch. Maikel smiles and kisses his daughter. Tom: I'm not supposed to say this, but Maikel have you never wondered why Justin doesn't look like you? Maikel: "Oh well it will be nice then we go outside. Have sat here quiet for a long time now!" Tom grabs Maikel by the head. Immediately when Maikel wants to play, he completely slacks. And he sees Koos takes his dick out of his pants, and have a go with Amy for ten minutes. Only when he is finished after those ten minutes does Maikel pull him off from Amy. He sees how Koos enjoyed the blows. Something he didn't see back then, blinded by anger. He sees what Amy did to him when she came to, she was right. But he also sees what happened when they biked away.



Koos stood up laughing and was stabbed in both legs, no more balls, and stuck in his fat tripe. But he got up laughing. He calls something in a foreign language, the same language as in his vision of the crow leader. That vision of the shadow in the church. And his voice has turned into that heavy voice he has heard in his head for the past few days. Then he hears a song sound the same song as came out of the speakers in the petting zoo.

*I need to endure in this life. I need to endure for my wife. I need to endure for my kids. I need to endure of that I'm sure. You can't kill me but I dare you to try. And when you look up in the sky.*

*I just hope you ask yourself why. Why can't i die. I warn you. I warn you. I warn you. I warn you I won't die I won't die I won't die.*

He hears the song in that heavy voice that voice from his nightmares. Then he sees the smiling face of Koos, who seems far too happy. In a dark black wooded area. His eyes are bright green against the poison green. And every time he approaches, the eyes get bigger and brighter. Every second every millisecond, those eyes get bigger and brighter. Until Maikel sees nothing but green poison green, and he falls over with fear. Tom lets go and asks: "Did you see Mike?" Maikel is completely out of the world and is catching flies. Amy is completely in a panic. Tom has disappeared at once.

When the manager comes along, he says: If you just pay quietly, there is nothing wrong and you can leave.

Sir call the police, the man standing with us should not get away.

Madam I've seen everything. What you were doing were not, but not the third man. Just you and your baby.

No Tom?

No madam no Tom just look at the camera images.

But would you please stay off the drugs in my supermarket? Is not good for your little girl either.

**WE DO NOT USE DRUGS AT ALL!**

Ma'am, do you want to leave the building?

No, my groceries have yet to be paid.

Take it with you, ma'am, I doubt you have enough money with you.

Amy thanks the manager and asks:

I take my guy with you is that okay?

I like that madam. And if you leave without a scene, you will not be banned from this supermarket. But madam please stay off the grass or whatever from now on.

Amy says in an angry voice: we don't use ... oh well never mind. Mike let's go. She takes Maikel in his collar and they walk out of the supermarket with groceries and all the store.

Only when they are outside and the cold wind brings the tripping Maikel back to reality the realization come to both. And at the same time, they say: **The power of perception.**

Amy jokes, "At least the groceries were free." "Wait, then we have to go somewhere." He gets into the car, which is still in front of the same house. "Aims come on!" She puts Chantal in the child seat, and steps into Maikel looks out the window and sighs. Maikel says grumpily, "Fasten your seat belt this time." He looks at the car radio clock. It says 3:30 pm, "we only have an hour and a half Aims."

"What for?" "You'll find out," he replies.

He drives through three villages in no time until he reaches his destination.

The village of Zwolmeren. And he drives around a bit until he sees a guitar shop. There he stops the car: "Wait a minute, Aims."

He walks into it just in time Amy thinks when she looks at the car radio clock that says 16:47. Maikel comes out at 17:12 with an electric guitar in cover and a small amplifier. He puts the guitar in the trunk and puts the amplifier next to it. Then he gets into the car and drives on. "What did it cost?" "Not a gray hair!" Is the answer to her question. "Mike what did that cost?"

"One hundred and ten euros and a few cents. Can we miss it or not, he snarls. "

He passes a gas station and fills the tank, and they continue on their way home in good spirits. Another village, another village. And then they see their village. Warmermeer he says happily, "We are here!" He drives into the street and gets out happy. "Aim Tallie come." It's 18:19 when they open the front door. Maikel happily calls the children together, **young boys HERE COME NOW. BOYS COME HERE.** The children both come from the kitchen. And Justin asks: "What's the matter?" "Look." He shows a nice black guitar and takes the amplifier from behind the couch. Justin is the first to try to play on it but nothing.

Francis hears the noise and wants to try nothing again. Then Bud arrives and Bud is immediately in love. He plays the toughest chords and Justin says:

"Oh, throw out a solo..."

Bud does that with the greatest of ease. Justin asks: "How are you doing that buddy?" Bud takes pen and paper and draws it out for Justin. He says that's how you do it. He shows Justin the strings. He explains: The top is the bottom string and the bottom is the top string. The numbers represent the frets. The p stands for pull off. So, you pull the string towards you for a moment. And the slash stands for sliding forward. Justin tries and succeeds in his first attempt. Bud: "I'm proud of you just." Maikel is enjoying the musical children. But if Justin plays it again and hits a note wrong. Hear Maikel beat that old longcase clock again 6x. His grandfather's clock. What's the matter with that thing, he thinks. Everything has been 6 or 9 in the last few days. the more he thinks about it the more he gets caught up in his past. It was not without reason that they called him a murderous maniac with suicidal tendencies. He comes back in his past, all the way back.

When he was eleven, his friends all used drugs. Some weed and some a step further. It started with him like many. First, a few bottles of beer and then say no to a joint. It started with three puffs of a joint. That was fun back then. But the more he interacted with his friends, the more he became addicted to other things than just weed. It started so innocently. Anyway, when is drugs or alcohol actually harmless? It was only when he was so far away that he had already hurt many people or worse, that was when he realized.

The realization that his friends were not friends but the greatest of parasites. Those parasites that all broke his life bit by bit. And made living hell for others who lived with him. It started as a way out in pain. The pain inflicted by his father. But he hurt his mother with it. That is why he was called devil's seed in a divine jacket. He reminded her of his father. That dirty idiot. It wasn't until he met Amy that he took the right path. Withdrawing was no fun for him and neither was Amy. Not even at all. But he is grateful to Amy twelve years later for that. For the opportunity offered. Amy saved his life three times.

That's where she got the nickname Aims. They had to fight for where they are now. For their family and each other. But don't give Amy a gun because then she'll go crazy. She'll shoot you before you can look at her. He was always more into the knives. Noiseless and those idiots have known that. He led the way and Amy followed. He killed six gory and Amy ten without looking or blushing. Only when there were only three left. They ran away from sight. And they were able to build a life. Without those parasites that destroy everything around you. Without those fags who don't want to change. Only when they got rid of everything. Then the stories circulated about them. He was a murderous maniac with suicidal tendencies. And she was a stranger to dangerous terrain. She joked about those stories. She combined two simple words of unknown and tendencies. From now on they are also known for that:

*Unknown Tendencies.*

He thinks to himself is that because I hear that clock or because of that solo? He hears his mother's soft voice again saying:

*Good Mike you think now.*

Maikel asks out loud: "What do I have to think about?" Amy laughs and says: "You don't have to think about anything Mike. Just listen to our own musicians." He hears his mother's voice say one last thing:

*Look at your father and judge for yourself.*

Maikel bursts into tears, but it's too late to turn it back. Maikel thinks I'm no better. The only thing I've been better at is meeting Amy. The woman of my dreams. Maikel says sadly: "Boys very beautiful, but can you stop now?" The boys put the guitar aside out of respect for Maikel. "Justin come kid. I have to tell you something." Justin walks over to Maikel in the kitchen. And sits down. "Boy what I'm going to say now is no fun." Justin puts his hands on his dad's trembling ones and asks: "What's the matter?" Maikel takes a deep breath and says: "I always have to be honest about everything. right?"

Yes, dad prefers, depends on what.

That those schools didn't want you is because of daddy. Daddy used to be addicted to all kinds of junk. And made mistakes. I am a murderer just...

Okay, that's out and what else is there?

Do you remember that man who lived in that mansion?

Yes, dad what is that, that scary man? That very old scareneck?

Yes, that old scareneck. He tries to explain it but he doesn't get the right words. Justin asks with wide eyes what's the matter with this man dad?

I have to be honest but not sorry about this boy. I can't, and will you do me a favor? Don't ask Mom.

Is that a bad man daddy?

Yes, the worst. Just then they hear Bud's solo again and Justin says: "Dad, you don't have to tell me if I can listen to Bud." "Yes, of course, boy, go. And he thinks to himself saved by the guitar. When he walks into the room, he Don't see Chantal. He changes his mind maybe she's upstairs, and he walks up the stairs. When he looks in her room she is not in her bed. Maikel goes through all the rooms. First Justin's, then Francis's but nothing. And then in a panic Amy and him. When he opens the door, he sees Chantal with her small intestines lying out of her belly.



And Justin and Francis eat her piece by piece.

He sees two yellow eyes behind the cannibalistic boys. The yellow eyes keep looking. Like a wolf in the forest looking for weaknesses in its prey. Maikel in the purest form of panic remains. He does not budge and is unable to scream very loudly for help. Or to piss in his pants. He pauses to watch his boys eat little Chantal. Then in a fraction of a second, the two yellow eyes come closer, until they are right in front of him. It is going so fast that he is startled. And screams: **HELP! HELP! HELP TALLIE, HELP!** The yellow eyes shoot out of the room like a cannonball, and the boys stop there. Staring at Maikel. They don't move, they don't even blink. They stay there for a few minutes. Thereby his bed with Chantal ripped open at their feet. They look at him as if they do it every day. Not aware of any harm, with an innocent look in their neon yellow eyes. Those eyes of death. Maikel carefully enters the room. But every step he takes. They also put a step ahead. If Maikel takes two steps, they take two. Maikel thinks another step and a half and then I can get her. As soon as he thinks that, the boys take his dagger from under his pillow and run to him. He turns and runs out of the room. When he is at the top of the stairs, he hears that Bud is still playing guitar.

He dodges the dagger several times, but sometimes he doesn't, and the dagger cuts deeper than ever. He turns away but all he hits is air. Nothing more than air.

As if he smokes a cigarette and vaporizes in the cigarettes. It is no more, but they can hit him with his own dagger. He tries to get away but the dagger cuts too deep and is forced to crawl for these demons. He crawls to his room, he must and will give Chantal one last kiss. But when he finally gets there after a long agony of being cut from his own steel. He sees that Chantal is gone. The boys keep cutting and cutting. Maikel crawls to the stairs with his last effort. And just when Bud stops playing guitar, he throws himself down the stairs. Amy comes to take a look. He says softly:

*I didn't squeak, watch out Aims.*

Then he closes his eyes.

## **Day VII.**

Maikel is slowly recovering. Slowly but surely his eyes open. He sees a bloodied bandage on the floor. And the yellow eyes that look at him. He is startled and says frightened: "Get away." Amy bursts into tears:

"Mike, I'm doing the best I can." Maikel: "Oh sorry honey. I thought I saw something. Come on over to me." But when he sits down in the bed, everything hurts him. From his legs to his back and from his back to his arms. He asks: "Where's Tallie?" "She's comfortable in her bed Mike." "Happily!" He puffs out.

Amy asks: "Will you tell me what this was good for now. The paramedics did not want to take you since they could not move you. So, then you should stay here. I'm just doing my best Mike too. I don't know what to do. I'm even your home help now." He tries to sit again but it does not work out well. The pain is too much. He whispers:

*Have you seen them, they are scary huh, they are so scary Aims*

Who Mike?

*The boys... The boys, they eat Tallie. They live on Tallie... they feed on Tallie Aims. Aims do something.. then do something Aims.*

His eyes slowly close and he is gone again. Deep asleep. She kisses his forehead and says goodnight.

## **N**ight VII.

Maikel wakes up screaming. And he pulls the cord to turn on the lamp. Amy is blinded by the bright light and she sees the pure fear on his face. The pure panic.

Maikel only says

*Tallie Tallie Tallie blood. Tallie Tallie Tallie blood. No not my girl.*

*Tallie Tallie Tallie blood. Not my girl. Come on **TALLIE HELP!***

Amy tries to calm him down and appease him. But it doesn't help. He keeps saying:

*Tallie Tallie Tallie blood. Tallie Tallie Tallie blood. Come on then, come to daddy. **TALLIE HELP HELP ME!***

Amy walks into Chantal's room and takes her to Maikel. "Look Mike here is Tallie."

*Tallie Tallie come, come to daddy, come here sweetie. Come Tallie!*

He gives her a hug and he no longer pays attention to the pain.

*Tallie good again. Tallie made. Now sleep daddy, dad tired.* Chantal cries and Maikel kisses her: "Tallie, sweet." Chantal says: "Nilai help Daddy." "That's a sweet lady, but you don't have to. Daddy is in no pain. " Chantal says: "Nilai, I help dad proud of dad." He says angrily: **Aims put her in bed she has to sleep.**

"Well, girl now you go back to bed." Just as Amy walks away, she sees Justin sneaking into Francis's room. Amy now thinks I'm fed up. And first puts Chantal in her bed. Then she goes looking for the missing Justin. But when she walks into Francis's room, she sees that the boys are eating. She walks over to the boys and feels a hand on her neck. Francis is holding his index finger to his mouth and he's pointing to Justin's room. When Amy doesn't understand who the other two boys are, but doesn't dare to ask, and decides to walk with Francis to Justin's room. Immediately look as she turns four eyes to her.

Neon yellow eyes, which can bring light even in the greatest darkness. She slowly walks backward. But every step she takes back, the boys slowly come closer with eyes like reflective fireflies.

She is two steps from Justin's room, but it looks like a marathon to her. With every step she takes back, Justin's room is getting further away. But when she walks ahead, she keeps getting closer to Justin's door. She has her back to it, she knocks three times. The door opens and Amy is pulled in. At that moment she lets out a scream. She is pulled in so hard she falls over. She looks around scared when she is in the room. Justin looks at her and says: "Don't scream Mom! They live on that, our fear.

" There is an angry knock on the door. There is an angry kick at the door. Then it is quiet for a moment. Francis comes up with the idea, "Let's sit in a circle hand in hand." So said so done and the knocking and kicking stops. They hear Maikel shouting **hello hello HI**. Amy thinks what do I do now? I hear them from across the door. She thinks can they hear my thoughts? Then she hears from the other side:

*Yes, we hear you, we hear you Aims.*

Justin: "But Mom you don't say anything." "They hear your thoughts." Justin: "But not mine." Francis picks up, "Neither does they hear mine." Why yours then Mom? " Amy thinks but does not hear anything in her much too busy head.

They hear footsteps going down the stairs. Until it is quiet and remains silent for a while. Amy opens the door slightly. And looks through the crack of the door. She sees nothing and opens the door completely. But behind her is that oh-so-well-known Doberman and she says scared: *Hey Kerber*. Kerberos wink then he shows his teeth, the black drool runs out of his mouth. Amy quickly closes the door. While she closes the door, she immediately hears a thump. And another thump, and another thump. Until Maikel shouts:

### CAN YOU KEEP IT DOWN PLEASE.

Amy hears Kerberos walking, he walks to Maikel's room. They hear Maikel say, "No, not you again. Damn shit beast die already." Then they hear Kerberos running around in Maikel's room. And they hear Maikel say: "Yes you can eat me now." Then Kerberos walks back to the door of Amy and Justin and Francis. Only when Amy thinks about Chantal does she hear Kerberos walking to her room. She thinks oh god no no that is not allowed. She opens the door and runs to Chantal's room. She calls out: **Mike Mike come soon!** Kerberos hears her calling Maikel, and walks towards her at an accelerating pace. Maikel: **I'M TRYING TO DO MY BEST!**

And he tries to get out of bed. He finds his father's dagger under his pillow, and he thinks that's a bit strange. And he thinks about what he learned.

## **THE POWER OF PERCEPTION! AIMS THE POWER OF PERCEPTION!**

He thinks to himself this never happened. And immediately feels many times stronger. He holds the dagger well and he thinks now you are my smallpox beast. He runs with the dagger firmly in his hands to that demon beast. And jumps on its prey like a panther. He stabs the dagger in the neck of that mud-black demon beast. And cuts the throat of Kerberos in a single movement. He thinks to himself and now you stay dead. And stabs the dagger six times in the neck of that dirty ass demon hound. Every time Maikel stabs, it gets harder to get the dagger through the black stuff. Maikel says furiously and screaming:

**SIX TIMES SIX TIMES SIX TIMES! SIX SIX SIX!**

Then he stabs the dagger in the back of the half-dead beast nine times and screams again:

**NINE TIMES NINE TIMES NINE TIMES! NINE NINE NINE!**

*And now you remain dead.*

Amy Chantal and Maikel see the black stuff burn on the floor as if there is oil on a fire. That's how it bubbles. The stuff emits an odor, a bit of a thin dead odor. The stuff turns into smoke and evaporates. Maikel: *Oh no I don't fall for that.* And quickly breathes the smoke. he says: "Well, I'll protect you." Amy: Yeah but you shouldn't see how. Do you have any comments?

I've killed that beast for the third time now, that demonic thing comes back all the time. Amy laughs and asks: "Mike in that case, would you like to walk down?" Maikel: "Yes, there is certainly a whole army of those things. Well, we will find out automatically. Don't forget Aims: the power of perception. " "No, I won't forget that." She opens the boy's door and says come on boys the coast is clear. Justin comes out first and Francis second. One, even more, curious than the other. They look at each other and Justin asks *where have they gone?* Amy: "Daddy killed that hell-hound. And now he's looking for the others in this house. " Then they hear something fall in the kitchen and Amy calls from the top of the stairs:

**MIKE IS EVERYTHING OKAY, MIKE MIKEY?** Maikel shouts:

**THE COAST IS CLEAR.** Amy takes Chantal out of her bed. And walks down with Justin and Francis. She sees the yellow eyes everywhere as she walks down the stairs. Those neon yellow eyes, Justin and Francis have them too. They are in the wall on the railing at the top of the stairs and at the bottom. Everywhere she looks she sees those damn neon yellow eyes, only Chantal doesn't have them. More and more scared she walks down the stairs, which seems to get longer and longer with every step. When she finally arrives downstairs, she sees Maikel waiting for her in the living room. Bud sits in front of the TV and Maikel strokes him over his head, looking intently at Amy.



Amy is not sure where to look and wants to take Chantal and the boys outside. But she finds out that the door is locked. She frantically searches for her keys, but that is also in vain. She hears Bud's little bare feet getting closer and closer, until the tramping stops at the basement. When Amy looks back in fear, she sees Bud standing in the doorway, playing with her bunch of keys. He takes the keys one by one through his torn cheeks. He scrapes the keys on his teeth and plays with his tongue. He says:

***Sí erit vobis ultra ut interficiam in me, quia tunc auferam de visceribus tuis sunt. Et devoret abimelech.***

Amy doesn't understand it and asks scared: what does that mean Bud? Then Maikel joins the party and explains that it's Latin for: "*You won't cut me again, or I'll eat your guts.* Amy, sobbing." But I didn't do that at all, buddy." Bud says:

***I faciam te i faciam te i faciam te faciam te Diaboli semen.***

Maikel answers in a very calm tone: *I know buddy.*

Bud makes a gesture to Amy, but Justin prevents Bud from hitting Amy and is hit hard. He goes to the ground and Bud says stay down. But Justin gets up again and takes the meat hook from the heating pipe. He hits Bud about three times. When he hits for the fourth time, he hits Bud with the tip of the hook in his sleep.

The hook is stuck but Justin pulls and pulls, screaming: **YOU STAY AWAY FROM MY MOTHER; YOU KEEP YOUR DIRTY HANDS AWAY FROM HER.** He continues to pull on the meat hook, but he will not let go.

Amy tries to calm Justin down while Chantal cries and Francis is afraid of his brother. Amy says: Don't *do it just*. Justin looks at his mother: *Sorry sorry mom!* and in a single motion pulls the meat hook out of Bud's sleep. He pulls a piece of Bud's skull into the moment. Some kind of black oil spurts out of the gaping head wound. Amy screams: **no NO NO just JUSTIEEE.** Justin does not pay attention to his mother and sees that Bud's brain has turned black over time. And his blood has clotted long ago. It has a dripping oily substance that sprays from the wound as if a geyser sprays water. It only consists of that substance. Justin goes on and on with the meat hook. First in his right hand and then he passes it to the left to hit more.

Maikel stops him when Bud is nothing more than a simmering pool of black oil. Justin doesn't want to hear about it and says angrily:

**No dad then you should have done something about that idiot, remember porridge that idiot wanted to hit mom. He wanted to hit mom, I grab him I grab him I grab him. I kill him.**

When Maikel looks into Justin's eyes, he sees that they are completely white.

Justin's pupils are not even visible anymore, he gives a smile to Maikel one that you would encounter in a madhouse with the biggest madman. The corners of his mouth reach to his cheekbones and in his eyes, there is nothing to see but dead white.

### *Unknown Tendencies.*

Maikel thinks to himself when he looks into Justin's eyes. Justin shows nothing, his eyes are white without a light. Maikel tries to see through his son's stone-cold iron gaze. But sees nothing but death. Then Justin turns to Maikel and angrily asks: *Where were you, Dad?*

I don't know, I don't know boy, it seemed I was paralyzed all over my body and I could only watch what happened.

Justin looks like he just crawled out of his grave. He looks like a junkie/zombie. He has a dead faded sunken head with a look and the eyes of a zombie. He has the behavior of a junkie who has been without methadone supply for a week and a half. Justin asks again: *Where were you, dad?*

In a voice that you only expect from witches on the TV. Maikel starts to tremble afraid of his own son his legs become weak and his knees start to tremble. When Justin says:

**I thought so. I'll protect them.**

**We live here thanks to you. Thanks to you, I don't have a school. People are afraid of you, of ~~YOU~~. And why dad why are they afraid of ~~YOU~~? And we should feel sorry for your whine story about your daddy? Oh, that man was so mean. He had to die, right?** Maikel says in a trembling voice: "*you don't know just you don't know.*" **No one does, Dad, and then you get it in your head to hit me? You're no better Dad. Shall I hit you Dad?** Justin clenches his fist and Maikel hears his little knuckles cracking. The moment Justin wants to take it out, Maikel says: "Sorry boy!" And Justin feels Maikel's adult fist on his jaw. **That's right you should have to protect us, dad.**

**If you weaken, we are all in the loop.** *You don't want to find us somewhere, do you? Somewhere they don't look for us? Somewhere we can't be found.* Justin starts to laugh as Amy did before such a clinically crazy laugh. Such a smile that only the biggest madman can put on.

A smile that goes through the bone. A smile that doesn't stop. Then he hears Amy and Francis laugh the same.

Only Chantal and Maikel are themselves. Chantal tries to get out of Amy's firm grip. While Maikel looks around, he hears the cellar door open with a beeping sound. It's hard to hear between the laughter, but Maikel hears it and sees a man come out of the basement. Enveloped in green-yellow smoke. The closer he gets, the closer he gets the more hysterical the laughter becomes.

When Maikel blinks his eyes, the man stands directly in front of Maikel and looks at him with large bright green eyes. Maikel just stands there peering in those eyes while the rest laughs hysterically and hysterically. The man is just looking ahead. As if he is looking straight through Maikel. When Maikel manages to resist a little bit against this pure fear, he sees that the man is looking straight at Chantal. Straight through Maikel as if Maikel is not there at all. He sees Francis Chantal grabbing and hears the voice of his father in his head saying: I burn my own antichrist with this. Maikel screams **NO NO NOT!** Maikel feels his feet burning. And scorch his flesh under the soles of his feet. He can smell the cigarette smell he used to smoke.

And it smells the same scent all over the house as it used to. The patchouli scent that his mother used to get closer to god and the deceased. While Amy and Francis keep laughing hysterically. He tries not to move because in a split second he sees his mother standing there. That sweet woman with that little big heart. She walks over to him. Like an actual angel would do. Kiss him on the forehead and say: *"Mikey will find your faith. Only then will you find peace!"* Maikel thinks that seems familiar to me. That's what those Jehovah's said for that church. And he forgets the burning pain under his feet. Grabs the fallen meat hook and tries to hit or stab the man with it but all that hits Maikel is the green/yellow smoke. Amy screams every time Maikel hits or stabs. It looks like he hits her with it. He realizes that he used to have a smell. He does not know why he thinks about this. But what was the name of that bright smell?

Then he knows olibanum again! That's the name of that mess, and at the thought of that scent, he looks back and sees Amy lying on the floor. Does he have no right? Oh no? **OH NO?** Amy lies there with Chantal in her far too firm grip on the floor in front of the front door. He runs to her and sees that her sweater is torn on her back. When he releases Chantal from Amy's grip, she starts crying again and Amy follows.

While now holding Chantal himself, he sees the bleeding cuts in Amy's back. And he asks Justin, "Do you want to put Chantal in bed?" Justin walks away smiling with Chantal in his hands. Maikel tries to stop the blood with an old coat from the coat rack. He says: "I'm sorry Aims, I'm sorry. I am so sorry." Amy points her finger forward. Maikel looks back but sees nothing except that mysterious scary shadow guy who looks at him. Amy keeps bleeding more and more. Maikel says: "Aims please watch out please." And she points forward again. That man is still there. But it seems like every drop of Amy's blood turns the shadow into a man. The green eyes change to a kind of gray. And he starts developing flesh and skin. Everything but bones he turned into a kind of meat bag. Maikel is still busy stiling and calming down. Feels kind of a soft wet steak on his neck. When he looks back, he sees the man's green eyes looking at him fascinatingly. He lifts four soft Frankfurters-like fingers and pushes Maikel away from Amy. Maikel screams: **Oh no we don't.** The man lies down on top of Amy and starts licking her wounds with a thin tongue. Maikel hits and kicks the man.

But the man does not feel anything while he increasingly looks like a normal man. Maikel throws everything he's got trying to push the man to kick him,

even the meat hook does not have any affect whatsoever. The man drinks and licks the wounds so clean that Amy slowly runs out of a drop of blood. Francis is standing there watching and does not lift a finger. He doesn't even blink. The man finally leaves Amy satisfied. And says to Maikel: **marbh.** *It had to be done Mike. It had to.*

Then Amy starts to cough, and Maikel sees that the cuts have healed. He says thank you to the man hugging Amy, and introduces himself. The man says: "I know who you are Mike. We have met each other before and we meet each other more often. " Maikel asks: "Where exactly do I know you from?" The man laughs in a devilish tone and shows Maikel a yellow glow in his eyes. Then Maikel remembers and the man from the church remembers. the man laughs again in a devilish tone and is gone. Disappeared in nowhere. In nothing more than the emptiness of the house. Amy asks: "Mike what happened?" Maikel says: "Oh you passed out." Strokes her over her back and say: "Man, how glad I am that things are going well again if only you knew... When Maikel walks into Chantal's room, he sees Justin sitting there with the little girl on his lap Chantal laughs and Justin says:

"Well, you see. Well done Dad I'm proud of you." No problem boy is the answer. But where did that scent come from, Maikel thinks. That patchouli that his mother always had on in his childhood home. And why was he thinking of olibanum at the moment? Well, it will. Perhaps the thoughts of a madman go through him. Maikel changes his mind that Aims will not come on top of this... He will walk down again. And just sees Amy happily drinking a cup of coffee with Francis.

## Day VIII.

He asks guys how are you today? Yeah well, Mike, it's a beautiful day today says, Amy. Francis laughs and asks: "How's Chantal and Just?" "Good good kid." Maikel still can't get that olibanum out of his head. Then he hears a song on the radio from a long time ago and actually forgotten.

*I will run to the abyss. I will strip you of your bliss. I will consume your grace. I will leave you in this place.*

*I never fail to leave a mark. I never fail to dim the light and leaving in the dark.*

*You'll never know what's wrong. You'll never know what's going on. To survive in this world, it ain't for everyone. To survive in this world, you need to be strong.*

*Who survives in this depraved world? The man who could? The woman who would? Only the strong. You knew it all along.*



*People are here to stab you in your back... People run away never to come back, always planning their next attack.*

Then the radio turns off. "Mike it's 10:00 you have to go to work, I think. You've been absent for a few days. "

Maikel walks to the front door and puts on his coat and sees that even the blood on his old coat is gone. As soon as he has said goodbye to his family and closes the front door, he almost collapses from the pain in his back. It looks like the wounds open all over again. Maikel perishes in pain but does not cry. Probably due to the severe pain. He falls out of an extreme effort to get into the car.

# Chapter VII.

## *The Temptation.*

When he tries to get up again, he feels a foot in his back and is slowly pushed back to the grass. His gaze becomes blurred and he cannot help but close his eyes. Immediately when he closes his eyes, he smells the patchouli again. He feels completely at home with his father and mother. But this time it is different, it feels different. It feels safe and nice. Instead of fearing his father, he feels compassion. He sees his mother again preparing a tasty meal as usual. And he smells the food like this is the first time. He knows exactly what it is, his mother's goulash. His mother looks at him, but even that feels different than before. When she says Mikey come and have a taste. He wants nothing more than to sit at the table and to swallow the feast, what he has missed so bad! Just that stupid food. That tasty food, the best and nicest feeling from his childhood. Just simply sit at the table with a plate of food in front of him.

After tasting the food, he feels young and free again after a long time of suffering. There is a knock on the door. It was the same way before. The whole neighborhood could smell his mother's food. The whole neighborhood could also join them. She made that much, she always made enough for an orphanage.

But when the door opens, the feeling changes. He sees his father standing with a bunch of flowers in his hand. And asks his mother for forgiveness. His mother walks out saying, stay away from here. You've done enough to us! Then he hears his mother shouting from the front yard. When he goes to look, the front door is locked. He tries to open the door in all his strength. But there is no movement. His mother screams and yells. He has to do something. He must! He goes looking for the keys but they are not in the normal place. So, he runs from the backyard to his mother. He must help, he must! He sees his father standing there and says stop! Stop Dad! His father looks at him and takes out a knife. Maikel tries to get to his mother. But the closer he gets the further she seems to go. His dad laughs and asks hey Mike remember my boy? Then he throws his mother on the floor and pulls her vest up. Maikel screams running **DO NOT DO! DON'T DO IT PA! DO IT TO ME, BUT NOT HER!**

His father smiles and does the same to his mother as he always did to him. But this time he doesn't cut six or seven times. But he cuts more often and more often. While his mother sobs a little. That's all she sobs and squeaks a little bit. For the rest, she doesn't budge. Maikel stops running run down he knows that his mother can no longer be saved. Not now. Then his father asks do you have any final words? She says in a trembling voice: *Yes, I have.*

His father says: Then you have to say them now!

*Jesus also experienced this and came back stronger. But that I lay in bed with you and left such a weak kid. That's an insult to god. That boy is the devil's seed in a divine jacket. **THAT WEAK EXCUSE OF A CHILD IS THE CHILD OF THE DEVIL! THAT WEAK EXCUSE OF A CHILD IS YOURS!!***

Maikel begs sorry mom, sorry mom I couldn't do anything I couldn't do anything... Then his father looks at him and says you could never do anything, Mike. You're not worth a nickel. And stabs the knife in his mother's back, turns the knife over, and says: **Look**, Mike, God does that to you. **Look** Mike **look at** her laying in her own blood. **Look at her** Mike what **you did to** her. **You** are the chosen one,

**you** are the **Messiah** Mike. You just made her suffer Mike. You are the devil. Haha, you really are a sweetheart Mike... I'm so proud of you.

Maikel closes his eyes crying and when he opens them again, he lies on a folding bed in a dark room. His wounds are bandaged, and he smells a mild scent coming from another room. He tries to give the fragrance a place while he stands up and looks for the light switch. In the search for light, he feels a shelf with soft things on a plateau. It is too dark in the room to see what they are. He blinks to find the crow leader's view. After blinking five times, he can see what is in the room. He is particularly shocked at what he just had in his hands. It looks like half a child's head. But he soon sees that it is a skullcap with the hair still on.

The rest of the skull is gone, it looks like the rest is burned. The skullcap is on a stand and on a plateau with hieroglyphics or something. To his horror, the teeth of the rest of the skull presumably lie next to the plateau. Maikel thinks did I had that in my hands? But it doesn't affect him much, not after what has already happened. He is not shocked by anything anymore. The room intrigues him. He finds it all quite interesting. The room is filled with stuffed pieces of bone and skulls. But he doesn't think it stinks.

When he goes sniffing around in a box and opens it, he sees a baby head there. The only thing in the room that is still intact. That is going too far for him. Babies are sacred, he thinks you won't do that. If someone deserves it okay, but babies are innocent. And you keep your feet off that. He has to leave the room. The room looks a bit like an old-fashioned tomb. But the door is nowhere to be found. It doesn't matter where he looks the door really is nowhere to be found. The longer he is locked up in the tomb, the more the skulls and half pieces of bone come at him. He keeps thinking about the baby's head and what sadistic man has that on his conscience. From the other room, the fragrance becomes more intense and more intense. It has a calming effect, with the result that he calms down so much that he likes it there. He only really has two desires a bottle of whiskey and a cigarette. He keeps it up in the room for a long time and starts talking to the skulls a bit. Well, there is no one. We are alone. How are you? The more he smells the fragrance, the calmer he becomes.

He picks up a skull and says: don't be so blunt. He hears the lock of the untraceable door open. It is such a loud noise that he is startled and drops the skull. The skull falls in two, and Maikel sees a yellow smoke coming out of the skull.

The yellow smoke does not go up or forward or backward, but rather floats a bit in a fixed place. A wall pops open, and a man walks in. The man looks imposing. He is wearing an expensive black suit with a beautiful black coat. And he almost immediately catches the smoke in a wooden box when he sees the smoke ascending. He introduces himself to Maikel hello you must be Maikel Maro. I am your guide in this process Donald Wester. Just follow me to your destination, where you will stay this couple of days. We apologize for any confusing situations. Maikel asks which route which destination? All of your questions will be answered soon. Is the answer that Maikel receives. Maikel says yes, all of that will be answered yes, but where am I at the moment? All your questions will be answered soon, Mr. Maro. Maikel tries his best to get angry with Donald, but the air is too strong and Maikel can't feel anything other than pure calm. He asks where are we going? As they enter a long narrow hallway with many rooms. We are almost there, Mr. Maro, please wait, we are almost there. The corridor gets longer and more cramped with every step Maikel takes. All doors are closed and presumably locked. There is a small bright spot somewhere at the very back of the hallway. Like a ray of sunshine through closed curtains.

Maikel tries his best to take in as much as possible of what he can later use to escape. He has a feeling he's been here for a while. He asks the mysterious man how is Amy and my kids sir? And again, the man answers all of your questions will be answered soon, Mr. Maro. Maikel finally feels angry, the scent has no effect. He doesn't even smell the air anymore but he has to do this the smart way. He can easily take the man. But how does he get through that way too long? He knows these places from his childhood. This is a loony bin he realizes. That thought scares him more than anger. For what is this asylum with those bones and skulls in that room without a door? Then the man stops walking, and he pulls open a door at the far end of the long, stuffy corridor. Mr. Maro lead the way, says the man. Maikel does not trust it and says no I am a guest here, you go first I will follow. All right, Mr. Maro, then we'll do it that way. The man walks into the room and Maikel sees in a split second what he can do to escape. He closes the door and locks the man in the room. Maikel picks up the only table in the entire corridor and knocks the table leg off by ramming the table against the door. The table leg finally comes loose after eight ramming's, and Maikel stuffs the table leg between the door handle and the door frame.

He made too much noise to get this done. Now he has to try to get through the much too long corridor. And preferably with reinforcement before those black coats can come to the rescue in time and stun Maikel. He looks for everything to open the doors but finds nothing. Nothing he can use.

The doors are too closed when Maikel tries to kick them open. And he realizes that he has wasted precious time. On the other hand, no black coat is visible yet. So, they are up to something. Maikel runs down the long narrow corridor. But at the very end, there is no door again. He searches where he can look but nothing. Then he hears a voice on the intercom saying hats off Mike! You are the first to get this far on the very first day. What not even a day. But no matter how much we appreciate your attempt, you must not leave Maikel... Immediately when the voice has had its say, all doors open simultaneously. And people stand in front of him and behind him. Maikel faces a force majeure of rarities. One misses an eye, the other's a hand or an arm. Yet another has a loosely hanging jaw. A man, in particular, comes forward and says I give you the choice if you solve my riddle you may leave. That's the leader, Maikel thinks while looking straight at the man. The man is the strangest apparition Maikel has ever seen.

The man has a bright white skin color with the same neon yellow eyes that he has encountered before. The man has no fingernails or fingertips. His fingers are made of meat and a small piece of protruding bone at the end. Which he points in the air. Okay, the man says it's time. If you're here right now, and elsewhere somewhere else. With the ability to change anything no matter how small. What would you change then? Maikel actually thinks about it before he listed the riddle, He already knew it was a trick. He answers the answer you have already given dirty push button. The answer is time.



If I would change anything I would change the time. All people start to scream and turn to him. While looking at the dirty man, Maikel has already spotted the ray of sunshine. People become aggressive and hit and bite each other. He doesn't budge as they turn against their leader. One pulls his arm off while the other bites his throat. He doesn't know why but he enjoys it. He enjoys how they slaughter each other. Until there are only two left. Maikel and a big guy. Maikel does not pay attention to him and walks to the sunbeam. He finds out that there is a small window but it is something. He breaks the window by kicking it. And he walks outside, where he sees a black coat get into a way too expensive car and drives away.

The big guy stops at the window and Maikel asks aren't you coming? The man bows his head and walks away. Maikel walks around a bit without having any idea where he is. He still hears reverberations in his head from the many screams of the deranged curiosities that roamed there. Especially the white guy does not leave his mind. That was such a sunken pale meth junk. What a mess that was. The more he thinks about that dirty guy, the more he's thrown back into his past. And he sees it start all over again before his eyes. He sees his father get angry with his mother again, and how his mother goes looking for the right words again, to face God. And especially pray for her Maikel. He sees himself going back to his friends to flee from his father. He sees the table again under the white powder. And the half-seals that have arrived are spread all over the living room. He sees the light disappear from their eyes again.

He sees himself again and how those lines were sucked in his nose. Then the most normal thing in the world, now hell on earth. Then everything was normal. Everything was allowed. If something was not possible, his friends and he, in particular, made sure that it was possible or allowed. That the abnormal or antisocial became normal or tolerated.

They were a household name, he and his friends. He was the quiet, Bobby was the fearless leader, and everyone got along with Jack. Even the rivals got on with Jack. He doesn't know what but Jack had something, something charismatic. When Bobby had to mediate again, Jack came along to be sure. Maikel sees everything happen again, even that day. The day of judgment called them. And it stuck. The day when calm Maikel, led by his even calmer girl, seemed to take over. The day where the past and the present ended in a few hours and turned into a future. Amy who got rid of the junkies with her father's revolver. A nice chrome with a wooden butt. He sees that revolver shiny as usual and roaring like a caged crocodile. This crocodile didn't even have time to roll over in the water. She reloaded that quickly. A matter of maybe two-hundredths of a second. And his old friends fell to the ground like barrels of bricks. He wanted to do it all himself. Maarja Amy knew very well that he would not have come back. He was more of the knives, he has always been. And Bobby has also experienced that. When Maikel finished with him, there was little left of Bobby.

## **We all lived a past to be able to embrace the future.**

To make up for your mistakes from your past in the future. Or at least try. Then he sees that bald bright white pervert looking at him again with those devilish neon yellow eyes. He hears the heavy voice in his thoughts again. And the heavy voice asks him: If you're here right now, and elsewhere somewhere else. With the ability to change anything no matter how small. What would you change then? Maikel moves wildly with his hands over his ears and his eyes closed. Then he falls and his back starts to bleed. Maikel thinks yes and feels like it is serious. But when he wants to get up, he feels a foot in his back. And it is pushed flat on the street tiles. He tries to get up but the effort makes him tired. So tired that he can no longer keep his eyes open. He tries one last time to open his eyes. Then he sees those neon yellow eyes in front of him again and he feels a painful bang. His eyes close and when he opens them, he sees Amy and his kids. He says: "Oh guys, how glad I am to see you." He thinks to himself. I'm the past, but they're the future. When Amy puts a hand around him and brings him in, she's interrupted by a meddlesome neighbor. He asks Maikel with a laugh:

*"Hey, did you drink too much friend?"*

Maikel puts his thumb up and says with a laugh: "yes that last shot did not go down as planned." The man smiles and nods. Amy begins to see sparklers from the rage.

Especially if the man pauses to get a better look at the sensation. Amy walks over to the man and says in a menacing tone: "If you don't make it out of here, I'll have you carried away!" The man laughs and calls to Maikel: **Does your woman have to solve it for you?** He asks Amy disrespectfully: "And what do you want to do, little lady?"

Nothing little boy.

She walks away. But when she turns her back to the man, she hears the man laughing and saying

*bunch of alcoholics.*

Amy takes a pebble from the ground and walks back to the smiling man. The man jokes *Well look she comes again.* Sir I would like to make a new start. She gives him a handshake. And whisper in his ear *say aaah!* Do I get a kiss? I immediately saw that you have a sexual tens.... She does not let him finish his sentence and hits him a few times with the pebble on his nose, his nose has turned into a thick red exploded piece of fruit where the pulp drips out of.

The man is blind from the pain and wild from fear. He tries to hit Amy but misses everything. She spins around him and keeps hitting that damn pebble with every round turned. She whispers again:

*Say aaah! only then will I stop...*

The man whispers in fear *ahhh*, Amy pushes the blood-red pebble in his mouth and hits him four times hard under his jaw. The man lays knock out on the street tiles. Then she puts the pebble back. She looks back at the man and picks a few teeth off the ground. She laughs and says:

I keep this as a souvenir.

Then she quietly walks back to Maikel and the kids. She puts the pebble where she got it, looks back, winks at the man again, and closes the door. She walks down the hall and notices that the meat hook that used to hold Bud's black oil stuff has now turned blood. Then she hears something in the walls. It sounds like a rustling crackling sound. A sound like a cat in a litter box buries its turd under a mess of cat litter. The rustling gets worse and worse the more attention she pays to it. Until her head overflows with rustling.

The only thing to think about is that those rustlers are in her head now, and want to get out. She walks to the kitchen and takes a paring knife. Looking at it and walking to the bathroom calmly says in front of the mirror:

They want to get out, they want to get out. Then come bees,  
come out!

Then she starts laughing in that hysterical tone, her eyes watering her belly hurts she thinks about what it will be like to free those animals, will they be happy?

And what critters will they be? We will find out automatically, she thinks. And starts cutting her scalp. *Come then come animalsies, come out then.* her voice is trembling and she is thinking what am I doing? When she looks at herself in the mirror. When she feels on her head, she feels that there are large cuts. She says **DAMN** when she looks in the mirror, we don't do that anymore. She walks out of the bathroom. But it's pulling her back to the mirror. When she stands in front of the mirror for the second time, her reflection changes into something completely different. She's bald instead of the long black hair she used to have.

Her head is exactly the same as that of her pill-addicted mother, and her emotionless expression reminds her suspiciously of her alcoholic father. She wipes the mirror and feels if her hair is still there. But she doesn't feel her hair anymore. She walks down to Maikel in fear. She holds it and asks:

"Mike, who am I?"

You are the mother of our children and the woman for whom I want to give my life every day.

No, I don't mean that Mike," where's my hair who am I?

Now let's see ... He is looking at her beautiful curly hair. He says: "here's your hair dumb-ass" And shows her.

He holds a lock in front of her eyes and strokes her head.

Don't worry. What's this? What have you done? How long have you had this?

Animalsies Mike, they wanted to get out. They were stuck, they must have been Mike. They got stuck in my head, I've set them free.

Critters Mike of those rustlers, they are also in the wall Mike. She folds her hands over her mouth and says: those sweet critters Mike. You know rustle critters. She starts to laugh and says I freed them. They are free Mike, they are free.

Maikel has seen this many times, too often after just a few lines or after a wrong blunt, he holds her and says: Yes, they are free. You've released beasts, you're a heroine.

Amy laughs and asks yes Mike? I freed them. I am a hero. They were trapped Mike, **trapped**. I never felt anything. *At least not yet...*

Maikel kisses her and says: Yes, you are. Come on, let's go find a mirror. No no no mirror no mirror **NO MIRROR MIKE!**

I don't care we will find you a mirror.

Amy walks to the bathroom scared and reluctant. Maikel jokes something more:

Incredibly, there is only a single mirror in the entire house. We need mirrors as soon as possible. So, what are you going to do like this?

I don't know Mike, I don't know I'm sorry.

Buy mirrors you are going to buy mirrors. Well look Aims, look in that mirror. What do you see?

Myself, I am myself, I am myself, Mike!

Now, look carefully what do you see? Look beyond that long beautiful hair and your blue eyes. What else do you see? What does your soul look like?

I do not know. I don't know, I really don't know Mike.

Then you won't come down before you see it. What you have seen is a mirror image of your greatest fear. And fears are there to be overcome. You keep peering at that mirror until you see your soul before you come down. When you come downstairs, I want to know what you saw, and then you will buy mirrors.

*Spirits are afraid of their reflection, so they can sometimes adjust someone else's reflection. And only if you believe that you are what you see then it is. Mirrors immediately make the house a lot safer. And it makes us stronger. I know you don't believe in ghosts or anything like that. But aiming for the life we have led is living proof that there really is something, right?*



*Besides, according to an old gypsy belief, there is also an alternative mirror world. And that would mean that the better you are, the more protection you would receive from that world. And the worse someone is, the more that person is punished by that world. You have now had a small taste of that world. You have now become afraid of the mirror, but if you closed that mirror world in your heart and could understand it. The help and thanks are unlimited.*

Maikel takes the bloody peeler and says: Good luck! And walks down the stairs. He meets Francis halfway up the stairs and Francis asks: Dad if a tree falls in the forest, but nobody around makes a noise? Maikel takes hold of him and says: I'll come back to that in a moment, first we'll go downstairs together. All right Dad think about it, it's a hard one I know. No boy he is not difficult. Francis smiles and hugs him. He pats his father's back and feels his father tremble a little convulsively with every knock. Come on boy, we're going downstairs.

They walk down the stairs together.

Come sit down. Francis sits down and Maikel explains: Do you remember what happened in our old house? Dad what exactly do you mean?

Those bangs in the night that always woke you up?

Yes, I remember yes...

Boy those were shots, as you also see on TV. You heard it, but you weren't around, were you? Maikel sees from his son's reaction that he has penetrated his mind. And asks him... So, if a tree falls without anyone around, does it make a sound?

Yes, I think so, thank you Dad.

In a way, that is the ultimate example of the power of perception through hearing. Because the bangs were common and hard, you were already afraid of it. But now that you know they were shooting, you don't feel so safe right away, boy? Francis looks away frightened and asks: But Dad, it was fireworks, wasn't it? **Yes, boy in a sense it is also fireworks. But when it comes to the point, you are more afraid of the explanation than what you already have observed those years. Your perception told you not to be afraid of it. And told you it was fireworks. Your perception has protected you from the truth in this story. So, if a tree falls or someone gets shot with no one in the meadow perimeter, does he make a noise?**

Yes, he always makes a noise. But we only hear the sound when we perceive the sound.

Good boy. You don't learn these kinds of things at school. But these things are important to know. Things you learn at school such as math, language, and economics are extremely important. All life consists of math. Math is very important.

Language and economics are very important in this world, a misspelling in your grammar can cost you a job. Everyone needs a job sooner or later. And then your money knowledge comes in handy. On the other hand, history and biology are again extremely important for mainly general knowledge. See, for example, that we know the time by how it is now because of the Maya. They gazed at the moon, how it set and rose, and were, therefore, able to build a calendar. While the ancient Greeks taught us basically everything. We can all read and write because of them. And in biology, you learn things about the moon and sun, for example. And something for when you are older. The human body and the opposite sex. So how you think about school, for example, believe me, I know that is your perception, so your perception that you find that boring.

But what I just explained do you find that boring? Francis looks at him wide-eyed and says:

Dad, I hardly understood a word ... do you want me to go to school?

Yes, as soon as I can find something for you and just. Maikel laughs. And says: Boy you look a little too much like me and too little like your mother...

Dad I'm going to sleep for a while... He walks upstairs. Amy comes down and sees Maikel sitting there with tears in his eyes and gives him a hug. She says:

All right, you changed the subject. Maikel laughs and jokes: Yes, but I give up hope with this boy. Besides what have you seen?

*Mike something very strange. There was an old woman in the mirror. Who looked at me for a long time. At some point, she turns around. And I saw that she all had open wounds on her back. Just like you have. Her sweater was torn and her blood was sort of running away from her. As if her blood was afraid of her. As if her blood fled from her. Then she showed me a house. An old mansion, where only women lived. Later I found out that it was a brothel when she protected the lady from a woman against a slack man.*

*With the help of a very scary guy, a man wrapped in a long black cloak. And just as yellow eyes as Francis and Justin had. With strange fingers, it looked like bones. There was no meat on his fingers at all. And it seemed like he had a demonic power or something. As he walked into that woman's room, the cross turned over the woman's bed. Until he hung upside down. The man also had incredible strength. He lifted that lusty gay man with one hand and threw him out of the window three floors above... And that strong man was down in a hurry and said something difficult in a weird language. But the strange thing was that after three words I could hear him. He said You will never treat me again Judas. And then the man turned into a shadow and crept inside that lusty creepy guy. The creepy guy got yellow eyes got up and walked away without any pain. When I tried to wipe the condensation off the mirror, that creep was right in front of the mirror. I was shocked Mike. That man's head, you think you and I know what a junkie is but this man. He had no fat in his head at all, this man had the real black teeth.*

*At least the teeth he still had. And when I wanted to run away, he somehow withdrew me from the mirror world in front of the mirror. I wanted to call you but it was in my head and I felt like he was stitching my lips and eyes shut. You know, like that doll from Bud... and when it was completely black except for a single piece, I saw a church behind that mansion. And I don't think that church is a real church. Mike...*

*I don't think that's a real church. At least they don't believe in god Mike there. Not in that church!*

Maikel scratches behind his ear and is silent. Just silent. He thinks to himself I didn't want this either. So, this whole story is about a whore-madam in a whore-house? And those neon fags are the bodyguards of those whores? Then we must be able to demonstrate that we are not a treat? When he looks at Amy it looks like she's possessed. She stands on her hands and feet like a contortionist and runs upstairs again. Maikel runs after her with the words: **Aims come here!** She walks to the bathroom and tries to jump in the mirror. Maikel stops her just in time and tries to pull her back. But the mirror has a sucking effect. It seems as if the mirror wants her. Amy waves her hands wildly. But her arms go all the way into the mirror. Maikel screams **AMY NO WHAT HAPPENS HERE?** Then he sees the man too, he is pulling Amy towards him. The junk Amy was talking about. Maikel now sees him too. And know that there is only one option and that is to break the mirror. But first, get Amy out safely.

He mustn't think about her breaking in half or anything. From an extreme showdown with a creature four times as strong as him, he manages to get Amy out.

The man laughs, Maikel hears him laughing. He tries to get out of the mirror. Amy screams **NO NO, NO MIKE MIKEEE!**

But Maikel smashes the mirror while the man is half hanging out. Amy screams what are you doing now man? Maikel sees the half-shadow flying down the stairs through the bathroom. He's in, he's in now Mike... what have you done now? Damn man you just make everything worse. Maikel hears singing. As he used to hear in church, but this is different. This is more intense and above all, it gives a kind of dark atmosphere in the house. The singing comes from the walls, the corridors, and even the ceiling. Maikel thinks what if.. And blinks with his eyes he regains the view of the Fitheach Cosanta, and sees that there are all people in his house. They shout then scream and shout they point, they point to Maikel when he sees them. Maikel walks over to Chantal and calls Amy and the children. There are seven around Chantal, they are singing. He hears a familiar word in the singing of the people. Or a name, he hears NAMTILLAKU. He feels pure fear when he hears Chantal crying. Fear turned into anger, he picks up Chantal. People look at him and turn into small shadows that crawl towards him on the ground. He is followed every step he takes. He sees one turning back into a man. It's the man from first.

That man who came out of the basement, that meat bag before he was sucked into that asylum. The shadow begins to form flesh again. Until the shadow has turned into a man again. Who chases him. He can only point to the crying Chantal. Chantal screams **NILAI** and Maikel walks back in fear. He shouts: *Amy, Amy, Aims come here.* When Maikel has his back against the wall and there is no way left. He hears wolves howling in the distance. He looks persistently for a while. Chantal screams **NILAI**, then Maikel hears growls from behind him at the bottom of the stairs. Looking down, he sees a bright blue and a bright purple eye surrounded by reflective yellow eyes. The yellow eyes storm up at first, attacking the man opposite Maikel. They are wolves, all wolves. They tear the man apart, every piece of meat that the man has won is eaten. Until only the shadow of the man remains. Nilai stands in front of Maikel and Chantal. And her eyes are getting brighter and brighter. Amy walks out of the boys' bedroom and asks: "What's happening now?" Then she sees the wolves and quietly takes her earplugs out of her ears. She steps back into the boys' room and locks herself in there. The wolves leave her alone. The shadows all fly out of the house at the same time. Nilai looks back and Chantal pats her. Maikel asks Should I do it? Nilai blinks and growls a bit. Maikel says: okay Nilai then I'll do it.

## *Chapter VIII.*

### *Reality or Fantasy?*

He knocks on the boy's door and says Aims come over. She comes out with the boys and asks: Is it finally done? No almost Aims. I will drop you off somewhere and then I will go to an old acquaintance. Amy looks at him with difficulty and asks: With what knowledge Mike? Aims do you remember when I talked about a pastor, the second day here? When we were in the car? When you needed help? She swallows, yes vague. Maikel says calmly: The road is leading me there now. Every step I take comes to him. If I have to, I have to do this! Okay, Mike but please be careful. Maikel laughs and says that man does not break me, not like my mother. You know my mom has not been a believer Aims. Be prepared for the worst. Justin says Dad you can do it and Francis nods his head. Maikel says thank you Nilai we got this! Amy takes Chantal over from Maikel and smiles gratefully at her guy. Maikel says: Well, guys, get your things and let's go!

Francis is happy while Justin looks around questioningly, so what is going to happen here Mike? The boys have their most important things together. Justin says I should bring this too and he takes the guitar and the amp.



Maikel looks a bit desperate as twelve-year-old Justin walks out the door with the heavy amp and the guitar around his back. He only has a single bag of clothes with him, but he has to bring that guitar with him. Justin looks at Maikel and says: Yes, Dad this is also important, of course, I don't want to get bored. Wherever we go... Maikel laughs and says: You are going to a peaceful place, while I throw myself in front of a lion without mercy! But as usual, everything will be fine again! Francis gets in the car: Where are you guys, guys? Get out of here, get out of here... Young Francis jokes with a smile on his face. Amy laughs and says: Well Mike you can't get out of it, no more. I can breathe a sigh of relief again Mike... She takes a deep breath. Maikel swallows and says anxiously, *Let's hope this works*. He puts the amplifier in the trunk. He looks at Justin and smiles: You keep your guitar with your boy! Justin holds his guitar tight and says:

Dad this is not just any guitar, this is an instrument with a soul.

I know that son what's her name?

Justin looks at Maikel and says softly, *Hope*. At that moment Maikel sees Chantal laughing from the back seat. And almost breaking her child seat out of enthusiasm... Maikel understands him all too well. A guitar is and remains something magical, and only a man can see it. his little boy is big and grown-up. He says comprehensively: That's a nice respectful name kid. And I hope she can teach you much more...

Justin hugs him and smiles, I knew you would understand, Dad. He gets in the car. Maikel is still looking a bit about how that boy grows up so quickly. When he gets into the car, Amy shakes his hand and asks: Where are we going, Mike?

*"Work."*

She looks weird and asks: Haven't you been fired yet, Mike? Maikel looks at her with a smile: This work is different, you will also find out. He starts the car and drives away. They drive out of the neighborhood and Chantal almost immediately laughs and freaks with Francis. Francis says to Chantal, Bye-bye scary neighborhood, bye-bye scary haunted house. Chantal also says bye-bye, **bye-bye, bye-bye...** With every bye, she gets happier and happier. Amy is holding Maikel's hand: Thank you, Mike, very thoughtful! Justin looks at his hope and strokes her. Then he opens the cover and starts to play.

Amy says you need the amp for that. Justin replied, Not always Mom. Just leave him for a moment. He knows what he's doing. Maikel turns on the radio. Then he hears that beautiful song passing by again and says to Justin: "Well boy play along to this..."

*Moonlight on the open road. My own drink in my bottle. I'm on my way to the endless possibilities on my bike. When I see the devil out of nowhere. The lord doesn't want to forgive me. I make the devil tremble. I cannot forget the injustice.*

*Out my way while I reassemble.*

*No way back. Not an endless flight. No burden on my shoulders. Shadows have my back. Hate my parents. Fast forward no more thinking. Fast forward to the fight.*

*No more thinking about the past. Dreaming for the future. But live in the present. People hear people talk. People see people should leave me alone. People walk on an illuminated road. I'm on trial through the darkness further on.*

*No idea what's going on. I have no idea if I will make it or not. No idea what to do.*

*No idea what's going on. Wherever I walk wherever I stand.*

*I leave my mark everywhere cause I stand alone.*

*I'm a guy you don't forget. I am a real trouble magnet. I have been alone for more than my whole life. As a little boy with the best intentions betrayed. People don't watch and people don't listen, people talk.*

*Everyone knows better to judge. they are at a disadvantage because it gives us the benefits.*

*People don't know anything, people know everything. People are blind but see. People are deaf but hear.*

*I see but am blind. I hear but I am deaf. I know everything  
but meanwhile nothing.*

The car arrives in the street of the Irish bar Maikel says: We are only there for a while this number is almost over. He asks Justin do you succeed? Justin puts his thumb up and starts his solo.

*People don't know anything, people know everything. People are blind but see.*

*People are deaf but hear. I see but am blind. I hear but I am deaf. I know everything but meanwhile nothing.*

Maikel says before I leave like that, I want to hear this on the amplifier first. Come on, guys. Amy takes Chantal out of the child seat and sees that Petrus is already meeting them. He gets a laugh from ear to ear: **Mikeeey**, how's it, man?

How's your back? Maikel lifts up his jacket. The car radio echoes a bit in the background. And Petrus shakes his head in disbelief. Maikel says: I will start right away. I need a safe place for my family, is that possible here?

Petrus nods: Of course, you can, we prefer it even more. They are nowhere safer than here. What do you mean Mike?

I'll be gone for a week to two weeks at the most.

Is Amy willing to take over your duties?

Amy happily replies: Yes of course I am! Thank you so much for giving me and Mike the chance. Okay, here's your first pay. Whatever you do, there is a lot, a lot going on here! He presses her 350 euros into her hand. Amy immediately gives Maikel 100 euros and says:

Here Mike for the gasoline... Thank you, I have to go now. Don't drink too much, eh! Mike, what do you expect from me? **Of course, I don't dick!** Maikel gives Chantal a hug to Francis and Justin, and says: Sorry another time kiddo. Kisses Amy and get in the car. When he drives off, he sees Petrus and his family waving. He wonders why Petrus didn't ask where he was going. He takes a vacation for the same money.

Thinking that Petrus might be after Amy, he hears that heavy voice saying, **Mikey Mike, watch your gal man. Keep her on a tight rope. Think Mikey! WHY DIDN'T HE ASK SOMETHING?** Maikel looks in the rearview mirror and hears the voice say: **Well Mike turn around. All right Mike get angry. GOOD, GOOD MIKE! WELL DONE! IT'S GOOD TO BE ANGRY!** But Maikel is fed up with the games and drives on. The safety of his family takes precedence over his own paranoia. When he drives into the village of Zwolmeren he sees a bunch of pointing people. They point to where Maikel just came from. The village of Warmermeer. Maikel starts to doubt should he go back now or should he keep driving? Then the phone rings and Maikel picks up desperately: hello with Maikel. He hears a sultry voice say:

*Mr. Maro please return to us.*

He asks who is this? And how do you know my last name?

*Mr. Maro, we know everything about you. And we would like you to turn around.* Maikel asks who are you exactly?

*We are Donald Wester Mr. Maro. We are all Donald Wester, Mr. Maro. We are your life and your death. Mr. Maro. Please return to Warmermeer* **Mr. Marooo.**

Maikel says sorry Mr. Wester but I have to go somewhere first. *Mr. Maro, we have everything here, everything you will need...* Maikel hangs up but as soon as he hears the beep, he sees thousands of green and yellow eyes looking at him on the road. The road is dark gray from dusk. And the eyes are in a long procession on the road ahead of him. And next to him along the way. There are too many. So much that his sight is taken from him. And he almost drives off the road. The beep changed to the high beep he heard on the first night. With his hands over his ears, he drives at full speed against a trailer. The truck stops after a long braking distance, and the trucker gets out. He walks to the window of Maikel. Maikel sitting there shouting with his hands over his ears:

**GET OUT OFF MY HEAD!** He flees the car and grabs the trucker firmly. He screams: **HELP ME HELP ME!** The trucker looks at him in surprise and says sorry Mr. Maro you must not leave, this was a taste of what we are capable of.

Mr. Maro, you must not leave. Maikel sees little Chantal fall in two pieces on the floor in front of him again. And how are boys eating the small intestines. Maikel screams: **NO NO TALLIE!** The trucker says this is going to happen to you much more often, Mr. Maro. If you don't turn around now, return to Warmermeer. Maikel climbs back into his car, beep or no beep. He turns on his car radio to get the beep out of his mind.

He hears Justin's solo playing on the radio. The trucker bangs on the door and begs: *Mr. Maro come on; Mr. Maro please come on... Mr...* Maikel thinks to himself that's my boy he starts the car and drives away. The trucker is left on the gray dim highway. Maikel hears that word from Amy again **marbh.** when Maikel thinks what that means anyway, he remembers his mother's words.

*When the marbh is close by, it is worth living.*

His mother used to explain to him that if you are close to death, life will be more beautiful than ever. So marbh will mean death then. But why do those people want to kill me? What did I do wrong? Is this all because of Tom? No, I don't believe that I don't want to believe that. This can't be thanks to Tom, not everything. Tom has been fair enough to say that Justin wasn't mine. Or did he say that to light the fire? Then the solo ends and Maikel's head is calm again. He only thinks well, boy.

I'm proud of you. He is not sure if he is there will he be there? That man is devilish, but only that man can help me. That man helps the occupying, but that man is possessed. Only the thought of that pastor makes his neck hair stand on end. With all his words and talk about the better days, the earlier days. For example, when there were no mobile phones. When the media wrote the truth in the newspapers.

That's a really long time old bag, laughs Maikel. Then Maikel hears that heavy voice in his head again that says : **Maikel who needs who? You need me, Mike. I don't you... you need me.** Maikel's thoughts go quiet, and he asks who are you if I can ask? The voice answer:

*The one who comes into your dreams when the light comes on. And the one that wakes you up when the lights go out.*

**Do you really believe this man can help you Mikeeee?** Maikel says yes, I believe that yes. No, I'm sure he can. The voice laughs in a devilish laugh. Kind of like that church guy and that half rib steak in his house. Maikel becomes paranoia again, how would Amy and his kids be? **Yes, Maikel how are they doing? Will Petruss have already made his move? you know he works for me don't you Mikey?** Maikel is getting crazier and crazier with paranoid thoughts. He puts the car aside and decides to call. The phone rings four times and he hears Amy's sweet voice. She immediately asks: How are you doing there? Are you there yet?



Maikel calmed down a bit and asked: How are the kids? Good Mike Justin is kicking a ball with Francis in the garden. Have you ever seen that garden? The sun shines there all day. Mike how beautiful here. We completely relax. How are you doing, are you there yet? No, I was a little worried about you guys... I know you're making the right choice, Mike, I'm sure. But this is not just about you. I also hear that voice, says Amy that dark voice. Who always knows how to kick your feelings.

And don't stop kicking and kicking. I know what you mean Mike. But I trust you. Do you trust me too? Yes, I do Aims, I trust you, you and the kids more than anything in this world. Well, you are going to work, I love you Aims. Amy replies: We never forget. She hangs up the phone. Maikel says ha you see now I have confidence in my girl. The voice says nothing back. Oh, don't you have anything to say now? Nice and quiet once. He gets a tired fit. One you can fall asleep in every moment of. He pulls the steering wheel but he is too wild with the steering and gets exhausted off the road again. His eyes blink from open to closed, and from close to open. He nods and falls asleep on the roadside. It is noon when he opens his eyes. And Amy and Justin are very concerned about him. He sees a blue and purple stain run away, enveloped in a shadow. He hears Chantal screaming **Nilai NO!** He sees a lot of yellow and green eyes staring at him. He realizes that I am on my own. And he stands up shakily. He sees that his car has got off the road and that he has been thrown a lot further away.

He sees a big hole in his windshield, and when he touches his head, he feels a big wound. He hears Chantal scream **PAPPA LOOK.**

When he turns he looks at the side of Chantal when he looks up he sees Francis crawling with a dented skull behind the wheel. Confused and scared, he runs to Francis. He calls **NO FRAN NO!** Francis turns the key and drives away. When he looks back, he sees young Justin sucking in the well-known white powder that he used before through his nose. And he sees Amy shooting at shadows. The bangs are almost imperceptible. It looks like firecrackers. He thinks it's not your time he runs after the car. The car leaks gasoline from the fuel tank. Not much later than Maikel has seen it, the jet of gas is lit by a stray bullet from Amy. He sees the shadow with the blue-purple eyes running after the car and overtakes him. But it is too late. The car is on fire and Francis does not stop driving. He takes a look in the mirrors and waving his hand out the window. The shadow is close but the car explodes. Maikel crashes in grief. This is his fault. If he didn't leave them, this never would have happened if he stayed. Amy calmly walks over to him and says: *Now I understand why you are a knife man Mike.* Justin just laughs. Maikel is so angry that he hits Amy until she no longer gets up. He angrily walks towards Justin and lets him sniff so much that he has the foam in his mouth.

Maikel gives it to him here boy this is good for you and gives him a few more seals. Justin loves to sniff it.

Until he drops into the grass of the roadside and starts pulling his body. Maikel laughs at it. And the foam changes from white to yellow and from green to red. Maikel keeps smiling even in the last phase, the epileptic phase. When Justin is switched off, he continues smiling. Then Maikel is interrupted. When he opens his eyes again, he sees a police officer. He shines into the car with a flashlight. Maikel says: Thank you, sir. It was just a dream. It was just a nightmare. The officer asks: Would you like to get off Mr. Maro? At that moment Maikel shoots off with his car. How did the agent know his name? Maikel wonders am I nowhere safe except in Warmermeer? Where do those people come from? Then he hears the voice say again: **Hey Mike a sschizophrenic is never alone.** And he starts laughing again with that demonic laugh. He has to keep his cool with the pastor. Although there is a suspicion however small that Maikel has become schizophrenic, he does not help him. Schizophrenia and therefore hearing voices is the devil's disease. Maikel isn't sure if he's normal anymore. He always thought so. Then he hears the siren behind him.

He thinks that cunt pig never gives up, he has been following me all the time **FUCK**. Not now I'm not that close now. the siren is getting closer and closer. But passes him when he ends up on the highway again. Not going the right way, he thinks. Then he hears the ambulance behind him. He remembers that siren goes like this: side-by-side death, side-by-side death, side-by-side death, side-by-side death. And also passes him. That must have been a serious accident, he thinks.

He's kind of called to it. He hears that voice say: **Go see Mike. Maybe it's your boyfriend.** Maikel wants nothing more than to watch. Maybe it's him too. But he has something to do. When he looks at his car radio clock it is 23:45. He thinks I'm almost there will I get a hotel or motel on the way? But he doesn't trust his own thoughts. What if he gets such a dream again? What then? He turns the car radio back on. And hears a disc jockey say: And now the long-awaited moonlight song. With the vocals of Aims and assisted on the guitar her son Just Justin. Enjoy people on this long long evening. The song starts and Maikel enjoys Amy's soft voice. But soon the text changes into something completely different. Maikel hears:

*Moonlight on the open road. Have a drink in my bottle. Moving towards the endless possibilities with open hand is how I get things done. When I see the devil out of nowhere. Maikel will not forgive me. I make the devil tremble. I cannot forget the injustice. I don't want to relive the past.*

*No way back. No mercy Maikel come on boy run. No burden on my shoulders. Shadows have my back. Hate my parents. Fast forward no more thinking.*

Maikel thinks this is not possible and puts the radio on a different channel.

*No way back. No mercy Maikel come on boy run.*

*No burden on my shoulders. Shadows have my back. Hate my parents.*

He changes channels again and hears.

*No way back. No mercy Maikel come on boy run.*

*No way back. No mercy Maikel come on boy run. No way back.*

***No mercy no mercy no mercy no mercy no mercy Maikel come  
on boy flee.***

He turns off the radio but it still haunts his head. He also recognizes that the text always changed when he was on drugs. But strangely enough, he is not on drugs now. However? No, I didn't had drugs.

## **Day IX.**

The exit to the city of Bomalen follows. Maikel takes a sigh of relief as he drives to the right. Now find his parental home and then the church follows automatically. His thoughts go mainly to his father as he drives past an old house. He doesn't know why, but he pauses to admire the old house. The voice is still. It's never been so quiet in his mind for the past few days. Just a serene silence. He remembers his father and mother. And how his mother survived that guy.

How his father was getting crazier and more insane about his mother's religious shit. How that pastor he is going to, has that on his conscience. That believer has Maikel's whole rotten life on his conscience. A life full of trial and error pleading down and continuing. The same as how Amy goes through life. They really belong together, like few. The door of the old house opens. And Maikel sees an old acquaintance.

A little boy who used to want to become a psychiatrist. That quiet little guy in the back of the class.

The guy who always raised his finger first with all questions. And then laugh slyly, and say to themselves:

I am better!

Maikel can't even look at him, he is disgusted by that guy. Which, by the way, is a bear. He wouldn't normally even recognize him. But that slick white hair gives it away almost immediately. He used to nickname him albino or snowflake. But he is not there for that. Not for that dirty guy. So, he drives on to his childhood home. And stops there in the street. The houses are almost destroyed. He gets tears in his eyes at the sight. There is a wooden billboard advertisement on the corner of the street. It says: Bomalen city of the future. But the youth have made it Bom-fetch of the future. He should laugh about it. He thinks of: Shit-grinding punishment of the future. He laughs but sees a slick high cock down the street. Such a smoothie from the corporate municipality. His smile immediately perishes.

The slick high cock looks at him as if he recognized him or something. He doesn't feel safe about it.

And that at his parental home. When Maikel turns around in the car looking for the church. He finds out that the tank is almost empty at once. He hasn't bothered about that all the way.

He asks: You can still make it? But the car starts to simmer. And right next to that high town cock, his car is shutting down. He has no choice but to get out. The town cock looks him out of the car. As if he undresses a hot babe with his eyes. Maikel is unable to give himself an attitude. And decide to stay put. The council cock walks to the car and knocks on the window. Maikel has to get out now. The slick township sir says:

*Hello Mr. Maro. You must be in the back of the neighborhood. You can refuel there. Are you coming back to Warmermeer, Mr. Maro?*

Thank you for the info. And yes, I do plan to go back yes answer Maikel. *Okay, Mr. Maro is enjoying your stay in Bomalen. And we hope we will see you again soon. You can assume that bye slick, says Maikel. Bye Mr. Maro, see you again Mr. Maro!*

Maikel walks away and when he looks back the congregation's cock has disappeared so quickly like a comet. Maikel goes looking for the gas station. On the way, he passes a jet black charred burnt down church. Only the skeleton is still standing. A man comes out dressed in white.

And shakes hands with Maikel. He says hello my child, what are you bringing here? I see you will ask for my helping hand. But what is the reason for your coming to this wicked place? Maikel says hello sir I am Maikel. You once helped my mother.

Oh, Maria Elisabeth Maro now I remember. I see the parable in your eyes, my child. says the man. I need your help to be stronger than the demons around me, says Maikel. The man puts his hand on Maikel's head and starts to babble in himself. The man loses the color in his eyes there is nothing more to see than white. His eyes are as white as death and cold as night. The man looks directly at Maikel and says everything that happened because of the serpent's fault. Everything that is going to happen is the fault of someone you know. His name has been cleared and the wounds healed. Forgive him his sins. He is not always easily endowed.

People see him as evil. Maikel says I'm getting a little scared now sir. The man says in an angry tone: **Don't interrupt me, my child.** And starts again with prayer.

*Everything that happens is through the serpent's fault. Everything that is going to happen is the fault of someone you know. His name has been cleared and the wounds healed. Forgive him his sins.*

*He is not always easily endowed. People see him as evil. People who look no further than the bridge is long see the water too late. People who always only judge others.*



*Usually don't know that it will change themselves. Lord forgive him for his sins. As you have done to so many before him. And give him your grace from the heavens. Give him and his family the value of life again.*

*In the name of the father the son and the holy spirit. Will he and his family look beyond the unholy beast?*

The man's eyes return to their original color.

And the man says now I can only meet you, my child. I am Pieter but you can call me **Pope**, nice to meet you Maikel! And gives Maikel a handshake.

He says evil is everywhere my child. But it is up to us whether we are open to it or close our eyes to it. You have looked evil in the eye. You have put evil in your heart. You have evil inside. And you can stop this alone. With the almighty help of our creator and father. He is in all of us Maikel. But it is up to us what we do with his strength. You have the greatest light that I have experienced in my parish in years. You have something supernatural but not something that will live by itself.

You choose whether to turn on the light and you choose how strong it will become. Maikel asks are you talking about the Fitheach Cosanta pope, and do you like kids? Is that what you call him, and yes, some kids like yourself haven't had a role model, am I angry if I want to help? Reply Pope.

Maikel says yes, the evil you are the evil in its purest form thanks to your belief I have suffered the life I had to suffer, and no I have no other name except spiritual crow leader.

Pope shakes hands with Maikel and says come on inside. Immediately when he takes Maikel inside he sees Maikel looking around. He asks Maikel nicely, doesn't it? Maikel says yes how is that possible everything is just the same as it once was.

And what is that wonderful soothing fragrance? Pope answer think child, you know it when you look deep inside. Maikel says sorry but I don't know. Pope says: **Think child** ! and puts his hand on Maikel's forehead. Maikel doesn't know what hit him. He sees himself as a little boy sitting in church with his mother. Everything looks the same as now. Nothing has changed, even the runners and candle holders are standing at the same spot. Everything is the same. He smells that smell again. It is a fragrance that operates somewhat in the background. It's not strong, it's just calming. It's tasty, it's old fashioned.

Pope takes his hand from Maikel's forehead, and Maikel screams **IT'S OLIBANUM** ! Pope says well-done child you remember the old fashioned catholic smell. You remember well Mike. Maikel asks you were just talking about an evil in me, what is it exactly. Pope says I have to start at the beginning, Mike. Do you have a minute?

Don't forget you asked me to help my child. Maikel says yes but of course. That's why I'm here! Answers! Pope says I want to explain to you but on two conditions. You don't interrupt me, and you don't look at me weird. Regardless of the answer, you get. Deal? Maikel shakes his hand and says deal Pope. Pope starts his story.

*Once upon a time, there were two ravens under Odin. One was called Huginn and the other Muninn. Huginn stood for thought and wisdom while Muninn stood for the past and her memories. As informants, Huginn, and Muninn traveled the nine worlds of Nors in a single day. The journey started in Valhalla the hall of honor located in Asgard, and via Asgard (the resting place for the fallen soldier) they went to Niflheim (the Norwegian hell), Muspelheim (the world of the fire giants), Midgard (the world of humans), Vanaheim (the world of the Vanir or Delus, better known as gods), Svartalfheim (the world of the dwarfs) Alfheim (the world of the elves),*

*Jotunheim (the world of the ice giants) and Helheim (the world of the dead). The journey ended again in Valhalla (the hall of honor for the fought soldiers combat). The worlds are connected in a world tree called Yggdrasil. And Yggdrasil gives life to the world so you can see it. Asgard is the most achievable for the dead Norwegians, although they all hope for Valhalla. While Niflheim is the now known hell, and Helheim is again a normal resting place. You could see it this way: demons live on in Niflheim while normal humans live on in Helheim after death, and the fallen soldier goes to Asgard. Helheim and Asgard are a paradise in this, while Niflheim is the opposite.*

*Alfheim, on the other hand, is the place for the elves located under Asgard. Located in the mighty circle, Jotunheim is the world for the giants. If we follow the circle clockwise, we first pass Jotunheim the ice world. Where Muspelheim follows the world of fire, and also the world destined for the fire giants. If we follow the clock further, we arrive in Vanaheim. The Norse gods live Vanaheim. And if we complete the circle, we arrive at Niflheim. Within the center of our clock the core that makes everything spin, say, a world called Midgard the world as we know it. The world of man, like a kind of clock on a clock that makes the hands move and rotate. Below the clock are two worlds Svartalfheim and Helheim, Svartalfheim intended for the dwarfs, and Helheim as the final resting place for the normal human giant dwarf or elf. Helheim plays a big role if I can rag my story?*

*The story of Huginn and Muginn as passed on from people to people took time. As you would change Myths every time which makes a Myth much more interesting than belief...*

*Maikel looks at him strangely and doesn't understand it at all. He says: please go on, I want to understand something of course.*

*Helheim has nothing to do with hell, but it is an underworld.*

*An underworld for humans or dwarf giants elves who died without a battle. Good creatures but also bad creatures. As I said earlier.*

*It is simply a final resting place for the dead. Helheim is guarded by the split goddess Hel (who was nice and depraved at the same time.*

Or could be.) And Garm a giant dog and like Kerberos protects the Greek netherworld from the living. Garm does that for Helheim. But where Kerberos joins as guardian of Tartaros, Garm continues to guard Helheim. The two ravens flew through, and since they were the ravens of the chief god Odin, Garm had no choice but to let them in. But where Garm had a suspicion and Odin had none, every day they stole a piece of soul from an overtaken person or animal. Which they then gave to the big wolf called Fenrir. Fenrir was a little pup when Odin took him under his wing. Odin knew it was a son of Loki, and thought he would raise the little pup when he heard it. The aeses knew they knew Fenrir was not to be trusted.

And they were right Fenrir became more and more misleading. He grew more and more. He had grown to be a werewolf for the newfangled time. He became more and more like the god of the underworld. Loki who originally ruled in Niflheim. And with the information that the ravens gave to Odin, Odin overlooked it.

Huginn was wise and misguided Odin while Muninn donated his memories to Odin. Odin saw that Huginn was telling the truth. Muginn was able to adjust his memory in his own image. Odin had no idea about that. And Huginn confirmed everything. While they invaded Helheim again and again to donate a piece of the soul of a deceased person to Fenrir. When the aeses found out, they tied Fenrir with a rope.

But that was not strong enough that it broke loose again. It was only when Odin put a stop to it that Fenrir was tied up and thrown into Niflheim. With Loki's father.

*The crows have been exiled to Asgard. Which is actually too much honor for them. Asgard is for the fallen soldiers and not for traitors. That's what Nilfgard is for. The only thing Odin was bothered with was that they came into the great hall of honor Valhalla twice a day. And he has trusted the ravens with his life.*

Maikel looks wide-eyed. And wants to say something but is afraid that he will come across disrespectfully. He asks: But you're a goddamn servant of God, aren't you? Pope laughs and says Maikel god is in all of us.

We are god, god is everything. Have you never wondered how god everything in this world can be without actually being there?

People all say he's there but you don't see him. Maikel when I look at you, I see him. When you look at me you see him. If you look at anything, you see him. You don't pray to god you ask yourself to change. For some people it works, the insight. Understanding that they have to change. Nobody can do that except yourself. What are you then Mike? You just have the power to move mountains and split seas. Just to get to the path where you want to go. Obstacles are there to be moved. Either way, you have to get around Mike.

So, if you say goddamn in a church. You don't offend your god with that, but you damn yourself with that. Every goddamn you say, you damn yourself a little bit more. And Mike you really screwed yourself up man.

You have not only Huginn but also Muninn in your mind. What did you think? That God did that? That you were chosen or something? Maikel you damned yourself. And I can't help you. I can give you answers. But could never help you with this. Then you must want to pray to yourself. And being able to adapt yourself. Maikel I just saw Fenrir in your memory. That's not your memory Mike. That is the memory of Muninn. And you talk about how Huginn wants it.

If your own memory is gone and you even have your words sent, then you're not a god to me. Then you are the devil to me. Then your father was right and you really are the antichrist. Maikel I can only advise you and that is finding your own god again. And fight that unholy beast. Kick their heads off Mike. Come on you are god, not them. Huginn and Muninn came from the underworld and you have to wonder how they got to you. Good or bad kick them out, Mike. Before it is too late! Maikel thinks about it and sits down on a pew. When he tries to find out the truth about what exactly manifests in his head. With full thoughts and a heavy voice that contradicts pope, he knows that pope does speak the truth.

He turns his head towards pope and says: I think you're right. I have to do something about this. I have to do something about this and now! He closes his eyes and ponders two things about how to get back at Pope for what he did to Bud and when it might have happened. The moment Tom entered, for example, or when he left their home.

The moment on the first night with Amy, or when he first saw bud on the second day. The car ride when he first saw Nilai, or the first time the crows met him at his house. It could also have happened in the mansion together with Koos' death. But how did he explain Dan's burning of the bartender in the garden of that Irish pub. The moment he conquered was taken by the spiritual crow leader, the Fitheach Cosanta or Huginn and Muninn however you want to call them. The song that played on the speaker of the petting zoo and the supermarket. The song he likes so much moonlight that Justin can play so easily and without a lesson. Yes, a lesson from Bud explaining how a guitar tab works. He does not know. He can't figure it out, not right now. Pope puts his hand on Maikel's forehead. Maikel more confused than before opens his eyes and sees Pope's white eyes staring intently at him. Maikel is shocked and asks Jesus man what are you doing?

Pope answer in a snarling tone: **Stand still child stand still. Only the power of the Lord could save you at this time. We are all children of him! Everyone carries him in their heart! I seek your personal strength, your perseverance and willpower. Everyone is stronger than he or she thinks. And only if you can find the strength to go against yourself and find your personal peace, then you are, God! Then you are stronger than the unholy entity or demon in your mind.**

***ONLY THEN YOU ARE GOD, MY CHILD! ONLY IF YOU CAN DEMAND YOURSELF WITH HONESTY OPPOSITE YOURSELF,***



AND JUSTICE TO YOUR ENEMIES, ONLY THEN YOU ARE GOD  
MY CHILD.

pope takes a deep breath and says calmly as his eyes return to  
their normal color:

*You better be a wolf of god than a lamb of Lucifer.*

*Remember that well my child and the prosperity will smile  
upon you. Whoever believes in his own god lives on  
forever. Do good in this corrupt world and your memory will  
live on forever.*

Pope looks at Maikel with normal eyes again and says open  
your eyes, Mike, I didn't hurt that boy. That boy was the  
embodiment of evil yes that's right. But I didn't do anything to  
him! Take a good look around you Mike and say if you still  
think you know everything. Maikel suspiciously follows the  
advice and looks around. He hears his mother's voice  
saying: *Mike, Think, Think boy think.*

He hears his grandfather's clock striking six times again. And  
then he only sees the church how the church really is. He sits on  
the floor and looks up at the broken and charred roof. The  
runners are gone the altar is gone even the candlesticks are  
gone. The only candlestick in the left corner is black, soot-  
black. He asks: But but where is the church? Pope says Muninn  
does that who plays with your memories, Mike.

Look closely, maybe you see something you don't see every day. Maikel gets up and starts looking in the jet black church. **No Maikel do not look, watch.** Just watch Mike, just like you've seen this before. See if you come here every day and tell me what's wrong. Maikel looks and looks until he can't believe his eyes. He looks out of his eyes. He sees the way to the basement from his dreams about that big shadow, he understands pope and asks: Munnin? Pope answers Huginn Mike, that is to blame. What you see is what you believe Mike but your thoughts can get weird sometimes. Maikel says the power of perception! Yes, the power of perception Mike.

What your thoughts transmit believes your brain and what your brain shows you, makes you believe by the image that is formed in your own eyes.

Normally I would have left you here. Chained here in the basement, but see what's left of my holy place. Even the roof is no longer there. Sorry Mike I hope I've helped you enough now. But you have to go home now. Youth has gotten worse than in your time Mike. I don't want to sound like an old whine, but today's youth has faded with the advent of the internet, cell phones, and they are corrupted by the image of internet and movies. They have done this Mike. Pope begins to shed tears. The strongest man's fright of life is afraid of a few children. Pope sobs. Everything I have ever stood for, where blood is sweat and perseverance.

What I had to fight for and what I was humiliated by the youth. Adults actually are the blame.

### **THE ADULTS THAT SHOVE THEIR OWN FAITH CHILDREN DOWN THEIR TROAT.**

As if God wanted that, we live with free will, everyone is free to believe what or what they want to believe in. The reason for life is the choices made and the choices yet to be made Mike. Please don't determine someone's choice.

You see it leaves little of your faith. Tears are streaming down his face and he says angrily: Mike stay away Mike: **GET OUT OF HERE NOW!** He grabs his chest and he collapses. He feels in his inner pocket of his white cloak. And pulls out a dagger he smiles and cuts his throat. Maikel looks in disbelief at how quickly it happened. In less than five seconds, he thinks in shock. Maikel walks to the man who was so scary in his youth, but who was broken by the new youth. He can't imagine Pope's pain, and thinks to himself how much did that man have to suffer? Before he finally decided to put an end to it. How much pain has he suffered, not through the dagger, but in his life? Pope's throat opens and a yellow substance comes out. The same goes for what comes out of his mouth, green thick foam. Out of respect for him, Maikel closes his eyes. But as soon as he touches Pope's eyes, Pope grabs him on his arm. Maikel is shocked and Pope's corners tighten, and he gives Maikel the dagger, laughing, in an extreme effort.

Maikel knows that yellow foam somewhere from, from the church that mansion. What the crow leader showed him. So, they don't always lie? Because this is right? Isn't Pope laying there with his body on the floor? He picks up the black candlestick and pops it a bit. He calls Pieter Pieter hey **HEEY POPE POP POPPIE HEY HEEY** hey Pieter pope please wake up! Did he wanted to give that knife to me? He takes the dagger, he says thank you pope! When he looks at the dagger, he sees that the dagger is identical to that of his father. Even with the same engraved inscription: Alitheia! when he says it out loud, he feels weird and confused. He feels something burning in his coat pocket. It burns to the extent that the burns are immediately spreading. He takes off his jacket but it continues to burn, he tries to find the cause, but the more he searches the more it burns. Until his whole body hurts and he resigns to it. He stops searching and thinks then I am done with it I no longer fight this pain; this pain is unbearable! With an unknown cause. If you have not gathered any information before entering a fight, you will always lose the fight! That's what his father and mother said. But he hears his mother's words in his mind:

*Those who are not strong must be mean, and those who are not mean must be able to learn!*

Maikel thinks in the intense burning pain, he knows it is because of that word. That word, of course, he is amazed that he can still think in that pain.

He cries out the word again. Alitheia! He thinks of his upbringing and especially of the words:

***You are dust, and you shall return to dust.***

Then a wound forms in his hand, the wound opens, and Maikel sees an hourglass emerge. The moment he turns the hourglass and the red thick sand gets stuck, he hears a heavy voice from the back of the church say: **Fear not Mikey your time has not yet arrived. I already know that you want to go, do you want to come Mike? Do you want to come with me?** Maikel screams **NO GO OUT, GO OUT MY HEAD DIRTY SERPENT!**

The voice says softly

*I'm attached to you Mike, I can't leave... At least not yet unfortunately Mike!*

Maikel sees the hourglass disappear into the ground and can only think of two things:

I must now have petrol; I must go home now! That's all he can think of. When he walks out of the church, he sees dozens of dead rats at the door. But all he can think of is Amy looking at the rats and with the snake in his head.

The two greatest fears of Aims. How would she be? I don't want to call; it should be a surprise when I arrive.

I can make a call, right? No, then Petrus also knows! I don't want Petrus to know too! But how would she be? Maikel thinks fuck it and he picks up his phone.

He presses confusedly and indecisively on the touchscreen of his smartphone. He finds the name Aims and presses call. The screen does not work the first time. The second and third time the phone is talking. But the fourth time the phone rings about. 1. Times .. 2. Times .. 3. Times .. 4. Times... He gets impatient, the beeps are long and there is a lot of time difference between each beep. 5. Times .. 6. Then hears hey Mike sorry I couldn't pick up. How is your old acquaintance there? Maikel says dead dead Aims... Amy doesn't understand and asks who is dead Mike? Everyone dies someday!

What do you mean Mike?

*Thou are dust, and thou shall return to dust.*

Mike you're scaring me now.

No fear I love you Aims. But everything and everyone dies, while the serpent in my head laughs about it..

Everything dies Aims except Mike **your Mikey, because it is apparently not the time for poor Mikey! Ah, poor Maikel!** You scare me Mike. Does Petrus have to do something Mike?

**No Petrus no Petrus I can kill him, and I don't know why. No Petrus please?** *Only you aims only you...*

Should I come to you Mike?

No Aims you are still safe keep it that way.. Amy interrupts him with the words Mike so so sorry bu bu but you are on the de the spea spea speaker.. Maikel immediately calms down and says calmly, gently breathes, breathe in, he hears her inhale, hold your breath for a moment.

Nice so do this five times and then ask Petrus his method, believe me it really works. I'm going to hang up nothing to worry about, no need for anything!

Then he hears the regulars cheering:

**Fitheach Cosanta Fitheach Cosanta Fitheach  
Cosanta oíoi!**

Maikel says bye Aims I love you so see you in a few hours. What an incredible asswipe. He just used me, he held me up so that Petrus could win his family over... What did he bought them with? He does not get far with his much money, and his looks certainly not! He's not Amy's type at all, is he? Did that woman trade me in for that gay? I get my gas and race it to An Tsochai.

**I kill him dirty traitor.. Judas Judas JUDASS!**

Put his finger forward. He follows his finger forward. He passes a shop where he can see himself in the dark display window. He sees himself as the man of his dream, the sturdy, man with that black mask. That expressionless black mask.

When Maikel touches the black mask he feels strong, he feels supreme as if he is tight again just like before. Such a wonderfully strong feeling. But then that feeling times 999 he is so strong that he can punch a hole in a brick wall.

*Judas i come for you judas, judas i come for you!*

He remembers that the slick council cock had advised him to find a gas station somewhere in the back of the neighborhood. But what's in the back for someone who isn't from here? He was born here, but in the thirteen years absence, his city, but especially his neighborhood, has deteriorated considerably. If you just see that the youth just burns down a church now. And like many things, that could have started out innocently, just a rebellious action by a rebellious boy. Just a loner who alone has the strength to crawl into the heads of the others. It is not something new, it is not improbable, it is not normal but it is not his life anymore. No matter how you twist it, there is a different story to it. Not everything is the case, for example, as the residents or even the local newspaper show. The more he thinks about what happened here?



The more he ends up in his own past. He has seen it over and over again how a loner can screw it up for the rest. And how, for example: A loner can set the local residents up against the rest in such a way that the local newspaper even sees a point in writing a piece about the youth. His favorite was from a local newspaper called the:

*Bomalen Courant.*

With the fat-torn head:

***The youth good everyday children or malicious pillars of the neighborhood?***

He used to laugh at that with his friends and there were sometimes reactions, such as robbing the supermarket or something. They had enough money, but they did it only to get that newspaper to write about them again. After all, they were the evil pillars of the city! and they had to stick to that. The more he thinks back to that time, the faster he calms down. He sees himself as an evil old man. Such a pervert who has to complain about everything moaning and moaning. And he thinks to himself no, I won't be like that! He immediately calms down, while he hears the heavy voice again:

**You are not in control Mike. You're not going to win this fight, you're not going to win it Mike!**

**You have never won anything in your life. Nothing and this fight will be your last!** He hears the demonic voice laugh again.

Maikel shakes his head and thinks a gambler never gives up you will see I have another ace on my sleeve.

While the voice is talking, Maikel knows how to fight the voice. But he needs the help of Aims for that. He screams **GET OUT OF MY HEAD, AND WHERE IS THE PETROL TENT?** The voice laughs at him and Maikel laughs along. Not to keep the voice calm, not to laugh with him but to laugh at him. He has the winning cards in hand but Maikel still has his ace. He walks into a street and a little further on the petrol tent is finally found. He walks to the pump like crazy. As he fills the jerry can he hears the bushes coming out from behind him. When he looks back, he hears shuffles and creaks. He is not bothered, his digital watch again shows 06:00, but the clock on the big screen shows 12:49. He hears screams and shouts coming from the beginning of the street from where he just came. The shouts get worse as the screams soften.

Maikel in supreme preparedness wants to say something about it. He thinks I let them argue for a while but if that guy goes too far, I will take him out. A dog howls and a cat squeaks, then it is quiet. Maikel walks in with the filled jerry can. He says sorry, sir. I only have cash in my pocket.

The older man behind the counter sits behind glass and looks out of his eyes like a gorilla. Pure anger and perhaps even fear he says:

Maikel listen to what I have to say then you will get the gasoline from me. You can fill your entire tank for free. Maikel shakes his head and says I just want to pay. But you can tell your story. The man says thank you and starts his story.

*The city has recently changed (two days). It has been going on for a while, you know that yourself. But it has escalated here for two days. The supermarkets have ransacked, the town hall and even our church burned down. It started at night and it all ended yesterday. There wasn't anything to destroy, not anymore. This rebellion has affected us all. I do not know if it will remain in Bomalen, it can also spread, for example to Warmermeer.*

Maikel looks at him questioningly and asks: Do you know?

*The man answer we know everything about you Maikel. You didn't bother us, I hope?*

Maikel shakes his head no we have not received any problems so far no.

*The man says great but this does not take place in Warmermeer "not yet." The cause is still unknown to all of us.*

*But there are speculations and fantasies from the scholars that our city has more than enough. But this has been published, for example. Some doom-thinker thought to make it.*

The man gives Maikel a newspaper. Maikel reads rebellion in Bomalen of alien proportions! And he laughs and says we all have feelers, don't we?

*This is no laughing matter. This concerns you and your children. Something happened two days ago at night what do you know about that Mike?*

I don't know anything and especially not what happened here

*Maikel a child was murdered two days at night.*

Maikel has a hard time looking away and asks what can I do and where does the bloodhound live?

*That's the problem they live in Warmermeer.*

The man stops the story. Maikel swallows and says please go ahead tell me. The man says no Mike I can't. I don't know if it's true it's unbelievable if something like that is really possible. But because it's you... I assume you know Etana's story? Maikel didn't see it coming and he thinks **NO!** He says hearsay yes, go ahead if you want. The man continued his story.

## *Etana*

*Etana always wanted a child very much and with the help of Utu and an eagle he flew to heaven. Etana had to beg the eagle for a long time. The eagle is injured and maimed into a well-thrown by his best friend the snake. Due to the snake that was angry with the eagle, the eagle ended up in a well. The eagle was hungry so hungry that he ate the babies from the snake and gave the babies to its own chicks. The snake that had made a loyalty pact with the eagle. Couldn't stand the eagle betraying him and breaking the loyalty pact. The eagle was hungry and the chicks were hungry. But the snake misses her babies and couldn't live with that. The eagle's betrayal went too far.*

*So, she bit the eagle in his wings so that he could no longer fly and strangled him after that she threw him half dead and maimed into a well. His chicks were starving. That's where Etana enters the story. Who preferred to have a child and consulted the sun god Utu about this, while the broken eagle consulted Utu in order to get out of the well. Utu thought I make two desires the same. So, he advised Etana to take the eagle out of the well and take care of his wounds so that the eagle could help him further with his wish. But the eagle was too proud, but I find it more arrogant. Because if someone can fulfill your greatest wish, just say yes. But the eagle made Etana beg so that nothing remained of Etana's masculinity. Before he finally said yes. Etana has cleaned and cared for the eagle's wounds. And together they had to pick up a branch from the fertile tree of life.*

*When the eagle flew from Etana to the heavens after long supplications, he left Etana there. Etana was not aware of this and was blinded by the proud feeling that he might become a father. It was almost certain even after the blessing of the goddess of femininity. He was the proudest man the world has ever known. But the way back was impossible because the eagle had flown. He called and he called but the eagle was no longer there, and he never came back. Utu shone a sunbeam from heaven and Etana saw a way out for him to walk down. A very high and long staircase that reached all the way to the bottom.*

*He happily walked down the stairs and was proclaimed king of Kish when he came down. He selected the most beautiful woman to become his queen and thus rule over Kish. But especially to be able to bring a beautiful child into this world. But the child was as mutilated as the eagle was before helping him. He did his best to take care of the baby's wounds. The woman he had chosen was disgusted with the child: she did not think he was beautiful enough to be her son. Etana was angry very angry and hit her on her head with two slaps, but with the first one, the damage had already been done. His new wife didn't move, so he came to the realization his wife was dead. He asked a god for help, the god NAMTILLAKU! But the god did more than help with the wounds. Etana saw the wounds disappear but when NAMTILLAKU asked for the truth of why the queen was dead, Etana lied to not look badly himself. NAMTILLAKU was not pleased by that and said if you want to live the life you think, I will give you another chance, to be honest. And again, Etana immediately lied, when Etana lied the wounds came back. And NAMTILLAKU damned the baby to eternity.*

*The baby had to eat death to survive because if he died or decided to take his own life selfishly, part of the world would die. The child survived for centuries to save that little piece. But what he didn't know is that that little piece of the world covered a bigger piece of the world for decades. For centuries, a little bit more and you have covered the entire globe.*

*I know the child last surfaced with you Mike I said we know everything about you! And I know you killed the child with a holy weapon. You damned the world, Mike. This uprising not only covers Bomalen but goes all over the world. Until a new civilization covers the world. How many churches are left to burn down Mike? How many are left to die? How many women animals and even babies killed?*

Maikel asks what can I do about this? The man answers first to get the fuck out of Bomalen. Second, Petrus in Warmermeer passes on this information to him: The end is in sight only he can save us. And thirdly: stay with your family before it's too late. An entire city was destroyed in a day and a half, how long does it take for the law to be destroyed? The child is not evil Mike, but the child causes people to kill who have never killed and turns them against each other. The child is not the greatest danger that there has ever been. That is us, we the people, with our greed lust for power, and revenge feelings. But now the danger has become reality after centuries of rest. Another supernatural war is on the way. Maikel keep the gasoline, and can get the fuck out of Bomalen. Maikel says okay if that's what you want, I was planning on leaving here anyway.

Maikel thanks the man and walks out the door. Immediately when he's outside he sees dozens of wet dead rats. He smells gasoline and hears the man shouting something. The man screams **MIKE GET OUT OF HERE!** Maikel looks back and sees the man waving his hand. The rats all ignite each other in a chain reaction of less than a millisecond per rat. Maikel runs crazy off the site with the jerry can in his hand. He hears a bang and he is thrown away from the blast. And when he looks back, he not only sees a sea of flames. He sees the man pulled out by a force of fire from a few people, and he sees the man screaming to his end when he is pushed into the sea of flame. Maikel already knew that the man was telling the truth, but that it was so bad he had no idea. He can only think of four things: What does this mean for the world, how do I stop this, why my Bomalen why not elsewhere and how are the Aims and the children? He sees people standing still in the sea of flame, looking at him. They are silhouettes but Maikel sees it well with the light-reflecting yellow dots of eyes. He stands up and staggers further he has to go home. Every step he takes he is followed by the silhouettes, the yellow-green eyes look at him all the way without looking away for a moment.

He sees the municipality standing on a street corner. He points to the street he stands for. Maikel doesn't trust him from the first moment he saw him. But now he has no choice, he has to leave his feelings and distrust behind, this concerns him too. So, if he can help, he would like that. As he approaches the street, Maikel hears the voice again:



*The end is near, I am the Lord! And nobody more. Outside of ME, there is no god! I will gird you though you don't know ME. That people may know of the rising of the sun and the setting that there is nothing outside ME. I am the LORD AND NO ONE MORE. I form the light and create evil! I the Lord do all these things. I have raised him in righteousness and I will make all his ways right. HE will build my city; HE will release my prisoners! Not for prize or gift. I am the Lord, only I and this is my judgment! The end has come, the bridges that connect the empire fall. And only of the justifiers of justice will survive. The only ones who will think of the lord close their heart. Will find the beginning at the end. I am the Lord who speaks righteousness. Who proclaims rightful things!*

Maikel says angrily:

**I am not listening to a false prophet! You say you proclaim the word of god: you speak of the end of the world and you take the honor. While you put people against people and let me believe you are behind this. You should give your poison cup a lid. You are a spin of my mind. And I will beat you anyhow. You turn against man and take credit, preaching about righteousness and justice. You are not a god but a snake with a poisonous tongue. What justice is there to burn a working man in the flames? Or kill babies and animals? You are not righteous, you are not righteous if you can kill the greatest innocence. My family are gods not you and you never will. We don't take or kill the innocent. You preach about your word. I believe your word, but I will never believe you.**

**You speak of the end of the world. You may leave my world dead, but you are not a god! You are a manipulative gargoyle, a spin of my mind. I am god just like so many with me. And we never bow to *Diaboli Semen!* I will beat you....** The voice interrupts him and says:

**Okay, you want it this way, you will see that I have power, I am the Lord and you will believe me!**

It is getting dark and Maikel sees the silhouettes of the local residents everywhere along the streets, looking at him. Following him with yellow and green eyes those yellow piercing eyes that can be seen everywhere. Every step that Maikel takes, those silhouettes also take. They start laughing as Amy did on their first night. The clinically insane smile can be heard all over the city. The windows close and the doors are closed in the neighborhood. Bomalen is a ghost town, there is nobody on the street except Maikel and the silhouettes that stalk him. Everywhere he looks he sees the shadows. With all those light-reflecting eyes. And to think that there is no light on the street except the light that the street lamps give in the twilight. Maikel thinks what did I do? Our world has become dimly inhabited by people with a very different regiment than us. People who can kill anyone.

**DAMN YOU JUSTIN!** If you had just left Bud alone boy.. He hears them all the way in Bomalen Chantal crying from Warmermeer.

He hears the voice of Petrus say, use the Fitheach Cosanta! He hears Amy you are god Mike behave this way too! He hears Francis say: Come on, Dad, you can do it, come home. He hears Justin say:

**He wanted to hit mom I grab him, I grab him, I grab him ... I kill him!**

Maikel's eyes are full, he says yes guys I'm coming home. In a millisecond he sees his car. He walks over there. But every step he takes closer to the car, the silhouettes come closer and faster to him. When he puts the key in the door, he hears a scream and glass breaks. Then another scream and a dull thump. He hears footsteps approaching him. Marching footsteps. The thumps of the footsteps make the street tiles vibrate, then he sees them, black shadow soldiers invade wherever the marching soldiers see a spark of light. Everywhere they enter they kill the resident or residents. Maikel opens the car door and hears the march accelerating every second. When he slams the door, the feet run towards him from across the street. He opens the gas tank and tries to empty the jerry can in time. It goes slow, a second takes a minute for Maikel. While the feet are running so close that the shadows have turned into people. They all laugh with an ear to ear grin. He quickly puts the cap back on the tank. He gets in the car when he closes the door people start screaming and screaming. Maikel starts the car and drives away. People come after him screaming.

Throw empty beer bottles or stones all they can find against the car. He passes the welcome sign in Bomalen again. But the sign is no longer there. The grass is gray and the buildings around the board are black and destroyed. When Maikel searches for the sun, he doesn't find it. That while he shone just as brightly. The air smells thin and the atmosphere is dead. Everything is destroyed in a while, maybe in two hours, but nothing more, that is impossible! It's like the man said:

"It has been going on for some time."

The man was right, he knows that too. When he arrives at the city border of Bomalen, he sees that the border has been barricaded. With a stack of cars on top of each other. He tries to ram through it car by car. After three ramming's the pile of cars falls over. He sees a group of people standing behind the barricade staring at him point-blanc. Maikel accelerates, from the sound of the engine people start to scream as before. Maikel accelerates again. The screaming people start moving. Maikel accelerates for the third time. The people run to the car with iron pipes and wooden planks. The sun was barely visible but is now completely extinguished.

Only the red copper light from the street lamps still illuminates the dark streets. In an afternoon which is very much like a dark night. A night when not even the moon illuminates.

A night in which even the biggest madman is still scared of getting moon sickness and not coming home this time. It is as if the devil has a hand in it. Maikel is not bothered by people's behavior. It seems like they all just got a bad trip. People hit the car with iron pipes and wooden planks. They ram the headlights and then work their way to the side mirrors. He accelerates and takes three people along with him who destroy his car while cursing. The two lands under the wheels of his car, shortly after Maikel hears their skull crush into pieces and sees the blood sloshing against the window. There is one on the frame of the ruined nose of his car. He grabs the dashboard of the car with all his strength. And screams with rage: **I KILL YOU, YOU AND ANYONE YOU CARE! DIRTY DOG I GET YOU! I PUT YOU DOWN.. THE BROKEN DOWN WILL GO TO PARADISE. I KILL YOU GODDAM.....**

He also ends up under the car. Maikel hears him scream and he sees the screamers skull breaking and flying against his window.

When Maikel looks in the rear-view mirror, he sees four more of those idiots running after him. But he sees something else than just himself and the people behind him. He sees something that Amy also saw. The man in the long black cloak. The man from the mirror world, complete with yellow eyes and bones as fingers. He looks straight at Maikel, and the longer Maikel looks at the mirror the more he moves.

Maikel thinks about bone finger or maybe bone daddy or maybe yellow boner is better Maikel laughs about it. Until Maikel sees his bone fingers come out of the mirror. He is obliged to close his eyes. He drives over an obstacle and almost loses control of the wheel. However, he can still correct the car just in time. When he decides to look back, he sees a man. His chest has exploded and not much is left of the rest of his body. Again, he gets tired, he drives a little further and sees a wooded area or well that was once. It is now gray and withered brown as if in a few minutes the entire city had become dead and psychotic. People are crazy like a junkie without a fix, or an alcoholic without a drink. He thinks give me that junk or alcoholic I prefer them over these madmen. All life is gone when even flowers wither and the grass discolored.

The sun gives less light than the moon and the creaking of skulls now becomes an everyday slump for him. But that does not matter, in a way he has once walked this way you see the future but you cannot escape the past. Everyone sometimes gets sucked in, some more often than others. Only the people without one error made in life who escape it.. The more he thinks of those hypocritical snakes, the more he feels at home in this new world. Now he can show them something with impunity. Or make it feel even better! He smiles into his fist and thinks Aims just Fran Tallie I'm coming guys. I'm finally coming. He returns his car and drives back to the blockade those crazies have piled up on. The blockade was removed with a single ram. And he continued on his way home.

There are hundreds of cursing screaming madmen along the way. They throw everything at him and his car. There is almost no road anymore, the asphalt has turned into a pebble or gravel road. His car bumps and rattles every inch on every side. His car doors are full of dents and holes from what people threw. But Maikel only thinks about one thing and that is home. I have to come home I have to go to Aims and the kids. I have to go to Petrus to ask for help. Petrus knows what I can do, Petrus helps me.

And if not then I force him! He comes towards Zwolmeren towards the highway. And sees dozens of people walking to Zwolmeren in a procession. The sky gets darker and grayer every hundred meters. The lanterns don't work on some stretches of the highway. His headlights are broken so he has to drive home feeling. He thinks it's safer to walk home. Cars have got off the road and truckers have died. The entire road is littered with dead people. The trucks and trailers are spread over almost the entire highway. The overlapping roads have collapsed and the tunnels are almost impossible to get through because of the debris in them. He is almost obliged to park the car on the road and walk the rest home. Since he ends up on a jet black highway and he can't see anything. Not even an end it is pitch black, like the oily substance that came out of Kerberos, for example. And Bud's head after his skull was separated through his temple. Bud Bud Bud why you? He can't understand how it got to that point? How did it get this far? He doesn't understand it, he just can't give it a place.

No locker in his brain that can be locked and no longer opens. Isn't this too much to understand? The end of the world after a child has lived for thousands of years, just to be able to save a small tiny piece.

How much pain must he have had? How many wars have seen? This is better for him. Justin has released him from his suffering but has released the slurry pit for the rest of humanity. Immediately as that thought passes Maikel's head, he sees a flashing light in the distance. He needs to get there as soon as possible. Has anyone remained normal in this hopeless existence? The closer it gets, the bigger the light gets. He has to avoid everything in the pitch dark to just go to the light. He soon finds out that it is not a flashlight or something, which he originally thought. It is an illuminated blue yellow neon sign with the text: Welcome to Zwolmeren. Home of the Blue-Billies. Enjoy your stay. The sign dazzles him, and he begins to see asterisks from the bright light hurting his eyes. He puts the car along the road and blinks his eyes. He sees something different every time he blinks. One time he sees dozens of people. The other time, no one is there. It fluctuates a bit in between. When he thinks no! No huginn, muninn, crow leader, or Fitheach Cosanta not now! He is shocked when all kinds of dead crows and ravens fall on his hood. A few even fall through the broken windshield. He takes a few off his lap and already sees maggots crawling in the animals. And digest the beasts faster than ever.



**THE BEASTS ARE NOT COLD YET OR THOSE PARASITES  
ARE EATING THEM ALREADY!**

he screams frightened:

**WHAT HAPPENS? I GOT DAMN IT! SOMEONE HELP  
ME! I'M GOING CRAZY!**

*please help me!* Five people are approaching him. One laughs

in such a clinical smile and the other screams **DO YOU FEAR  
DEATH CRYBABY? I DO HELP YOU: I HELP YOU OUT OF  
YOUR MISERY! WETHING CRYBABY!**

Maikel gets out of the car with tears in his eyes and asks: *Do you want me, boys? Come and get me then!* All five-run to Maikel and push him over the hood of the car. Maikel springs back and hits one on the jaw, he goes down immediately. He kicks the second on his kneecap and the third gets a headbutt. He gets the blood from a broken nose in his mouth and licks it away. The fourth and fifth don't run fast enough. And they do not escape Maikel, he is suddenly in front of them and one receives two blows on his temple while the other can clear his teeth from the gravel road.

The crazy toothless madman runs away like a baby and Maikel shouts:

**ACH YOU RUN AWAY NOW? A COUPLE OF SCARED PANSIES! RUN HOME TO MOM BOYS.. OH, WHAT A CRYBABIES! NOW YOU GO BYE-BYE!**

**SEE YOU AGAIN.**

He looks at the stupid idiot who is still on the floor. He asks: yes, kid a little slap on your sleep hurts huh? He thinks I'm back when he calmly gets back in his car. He continues on his way. Just a little while and he will be there. When he sees yellow boner in the mirror again. As if the light from the welcome sign is not enough. He sees those dazzling yellow bone finger eyes sparkling in the much too dark afternoon. Then bone daddy disappears from the mirror again. He has no idea what time it is the clocks are not working even his digital watch no longer works. The clock towers are standing still, there is no time. So, in a way, he has eternal life. Everyone has been given eternal life, without the time to worry. He used to dream about a timeless lawless existence. No, not just a dream anymore a wish. A wish that has come true after sixteen years.

He is faced with the next obstacle, a building that has fallen on the road. He does not worry at all and drives through a detour, through the countryside of Zwolmeren everything to get home. He should know has Aims become like this? Or maybe just that little aggressive little one. He laughs and when he realizes that Francis should have been the criminal. Justin is the school-goer, he shouts **FUCK** when he remembers that he couldn't find a school for that boy.

I failed him, I failed him. **DAMN WEAKLING** you have disappointed your son dick...

# *Chapter IX.*

## *The Reunion.*

Maikel hears something heavy coming his way and The petrol has done its job well but its tank is empty again. He hears the unknown heavy thing getting closer. Then there is nothing else left than I have to walk or something. By the way, there are enough cars along the road stealing one. By the way, now it is going well I escape this thing more easily. He gets out and starts running. That shitty thing sounds very heavy and he doesn't want to get under that. He is looking for a place where he could hide. He gets more and more afraid the closer the heavy sound gets. When he sees them, his knees give out and he starts to tremble. His hands are getting cold so cold he experienced once. When he thought he was dead. When he took that overdose to escape all the crowds and stress. But now it's tempting again. That overdose now sounds very soothing. Because he cannot understand what is happening now. Maybe I don't want to understand it, he thinks. The sound stops and Maikel sees that it is four horses that together produce a hellish noise.

With four terrifying men on it. One even more impressive than the other. The men stop at his car. And one waves his bow in the air. The other man on a beautiful brown horse gets off. And the rest follows. The man has a giant bloodied sword in his hand.

With which he waves wildly in the air. Maikel can't help it. He tries to stop it but the desire is too great. He is drawn to them like a piece of iron to a magnet. He's trying to stop it. He tries to change his mind. But he beats himself. The temptation is too great for him not to go and he falls prey thanks to the overwhelming desire. But for what exactly? He has a desire but the desire is empty. The desire is unfathomable. It is impossible to explain what he feels and walks towards the men in fear. Without saying a word, one of the four men walks up to Maikel. He bows and says fear not we are good are you familiar with the word of the lord? The man puts something on his scale and says:

*You are condemned to disbelieve and to question the word of the Lord. You will remember your sins forever, and you will pay for your death with regret. I wish I could kill you. I wish I could help you!*

The man gets on his black horse waves his hand, and drives off with the rest blindly following him. Maikel only hears:

*He saw the Lamb untie four of the seven seals. And he heard one of the four creatures say with a voice like thunder: **You are with these condemned!** And he saw a white horse coming. The rider on the horse had a bow. He got a crown and went out as a victor on the way to the next victory. And a second horse came, which was red. The rider on the horse was given the power to take peace from the earth so that all people would kill each other. He got a big sword for that. And he saw a black horse coming. The rider on that horse had a scale in his hand. And sentencing came with him. And he saw a pale horse coming.*

*The rider on that horse was called Death, and the realm of the dead followed after him. Every corrupted man will die through war, hunger, and disease.*

He used to hear only the same stories about, for example, the seven seals. And the four horsemen. He does not know whether this really happened but does not know much anymore lately. Imagine if they were the real four riders. They were completely different from the rest of the people around here. And that fear where did it go? That pure fear that you may experience in your worst nightmare. Where did it go? And that condemnation is also something strange. He always heard they were devils. Who did nothing but kill. But they let him live. Still, he would have preferred to live without regrets. Now he understands these devils are not normal devils.

These devils ensure that order in the world comes back. Now after 29 years of being afraid of devil demons, and all creatures from hell or heaven, I only understand order! He says confused and desperate. If you really cannot do otherwise, you have to do it this way. There is no other choice death belongs to life. Were they real? Oh no! It was just a few madmen who stole the right horses to create even more panic. He says bye bone fingers and takes his phone. With the phone in his pocket, he continued on his way again. Back to the blockade, he is now on foot, much easier than in the car. Now he squeezes himself everywhere. And he can climb if he has to. Fortunately, I am not so far in the countryside, he walks on laughing. But the gravel road is difficult for him to ask if they were real or not? He gets more and more confused. And walking becomes more and more difficult.

He finally arrives at the blockade and begins to squeeze through the cracks. He can see the end in pitch darkness. And squeezes between the small crack. He thought he saw sunlight. He was never so happy to see that sun. But there is nothing to see at all. Just the dark dim road surface. He starts to become paranoia with the idea that he did see sunlight. He's not crazy or insane he saw it. And he wants to see it again. He shouts up:

**GIVE ME THE SUN! JUST A SINGLE SUNBEAM!**

But he had long since forgotten what he sees. He sees his first girlfriend standing in front of him. A Belgian girl Lieve was her name, he asks: Heey what are you doing here? Lieve looks at him with wide eyes and it seems as if she is choking. Maikel tries to help her but it doesn't work. Then her head goes back and Maikel sees that her throat has been slit. A little light comes back. He sees that her throat is getting open and he says sorry sorry please I didn't see it. I couldn't see it, please no! Maikel with wet hands holds her then tries to close her big eyes and gives her one last kiss on the forehead before leaving her behind. He doesn't want to do it but he has no choice. There is no light, there is no light, there is no light! he says more confused than first. Maikel only gets angrier and angrier this way. Then he sees her again, in front of him. Again, she suffocates, again Maikel cannot save her. Her throat has been slit again. After Maikel closed her eyes again and gave a kiss. If something else happens she opens her eyes again. Stands up and points to Maikel's wet, bloodied hands. Maikel says you are still alive heey come here and hugs her.

You are still alive, you are still alive, how happy I am! Oh, girl, you scared me. Is everything all right? he asks: confused with large pupils. She whispers in his ear: *it's your fault Mikkel, it's your fault Mikkel, your fault...*

What is my fault?

**THIS THIS THIS THIIIS!** She screams as she points to her throat. She screams **KILLER!** one more time. And close her eyes. Maikel can only agree with her. Thanks to his former life full of booze drugs and lies. He and Amy made everything as good. Yet Lieve never left his mind. And there are times when he still longs for her. But hey that used to be. That she now comes to my mind to tell me that it is my fault. I am better off closing it. Now that I finally know whose fault it is, he says to himself guiltily. That means that he must do everything he can to get home as soon as possible. He does not want to experience this with Aims. He sees a car and immediately picks it up. Without even thinking about how he is going to get in. Fortunately, the door opens and to his surprise, the keys are in the ignition. He drives to the pub as fast as he can. Then he gets a call, he puts the car aside and picks up an unknown number.

He hears:

*Hello Mr. Maro you just spoke to Donald Wester I would like to ask you a few questions.*

Maikel says fuck off arrogant fucker I have better things to do. Especially now you have not seen what the world is like?



*First of all, Mr. Maro, I don't care about your language. And secondly, you have just experienced a psychotic attack for the first time in your life.*

Maikel asks: How do you know that now screwback?

*Mr. Maro, we know everything about you!*

Is the answer Maikel gets before Donald hangs up the phone. Beautiful also no longer suffer from adios limp dick. He drives on again. And sees a whole procession of those madmen walking on the highway. Maybe a hundred strong. When Maikel passes them in the car, they all turn around and stare at him. The last one he passes comes after him angrily. And the rest follows them throwing everything they can throw. And shout after him when he drives away. He finally sees the sign welcome in Warmermeer. We hope you have a pleasant stay. All Maikel can think is: Finally! He drives into Warmermeer and sees that the madmen have followed him. Almost all of the buildings have collapsed. The trees are on fire, which gives it light. People lay on the ruined street without limbs. He must go crazy about his family or not. He already feels guilty towards Lieve. And now also against Aims, right? No, I don't do that. I don't do that! He thinks while the disturbed cross the city boundary.

Maikel knows that there are too many to take on. He realizes that if the car unexpectedly catches fire and accidentally drives towards them, he might be able to deliver more at once. But how do you do that? More importantly, how do you do that unseen?

Getting away with it is easy since nobody would be bothered with it. He gives free reign to his imagination. But almost forget that it is not fantasy but reality at the moment. He wonders if there are any good people left. Then he changes his mother's words again:

**Look at your father and judge for yourself.**

The words are more powerful than ever... In this depraved world, perhaps no one could make a difference. But there must be someone trying. It is still too much to resist. With that knowledge, he drives on to his well-deserved destination: An Tsochai. And he will enjoy the society he will meet there. His girl, his kids, and even Petrus the only people who have remained normal under the circumstances so far. He drives on with a good feeling while the madmen chase and scream after him. After forty seconds the curse becomes softer and those insane ones disappear more and more from sight. He thinks this way suits me better.

Sometimes you have to fight, sometimes you have to run and sometimes you have to be the better person. Especially in a hopeless hell, a loner must be able to stand above it, even if the rest forget to do it. He thinks I don't have to do anything anymore. Not like then, I am no longer obliged. I've have hurt enough innocent people already. And in a way, these people are innocent too. He screams in the car:

**The past will never close nor will it turn into the future while  
the future has never been decided without a lived past!**

He already sees the park appearing under the light of the burning trees. The second time he came to the park he actually felt the end approaching, the park was so dark that he couldn't see anything. But the park now gives light like never before with a warmth that it used to miss. If only his father could see this spectacle of the burning trees. And the dancing of the flames in the dark dark evening. He sees the bright, bright green lamps approaching from the pub and he gets a feeling of pure happiness. When he thinks he can embrace Amy again. That his guitarist can play his solo and Maikel can finally hear it live. But also, that Francis and Tallie listen to Petrus's philosophizing about ravens and crows.

He thinks this may be the end, but I've never been so happy to be home. He looks out the window next to him and sees the madmen chewing on the limbs of fallen people. He is disgusted at the sight that even people. Just simple souls can be brought to the point of just beating each other up. The madmen throw the bitten limbs against the window of Maikel when he drives past. The windows almost burst due to the force with which they throw the limbs. Maikel sees the blood on his window, even before they hit the window. Even stones and bottles. The dozens of crazy people surrounding the pub. He sees that all buildings and even houses around the pub have been destroyed. Even the roof has collapsed in some, but the pub is still in full glory in the warm light of the park.

He hears a blow a little further away and soon sees that it was a car that exploded. The car tires and pieces of the bodywork fly through the air. The screaming madmen all walk happily to it and dance in the flames of the car. He puts the car down at a destroyed building, picks up his phone, and sends a message: Aims open the door in two minutes. He gets out of the car and sees that even the water in the park is on fire. When he walks to the bar and rings the doorbell. The door opens and without thinking, he flies into her arms with the words: how glad I am to see you! I love you!

Amy pulls him in and asks scared why are you so calm down here? You were literally in it. You got everything and experienced it. From start to finish why are you so calm? You are the calmness itself, even Petrus is broken with nerves. The children hear screams and all the time scolding I'm screwed, Mike! I have to calm the kids down Mike! That should I! And you are quiet and kalm.

**The end is here Mike.**

**FOR GOD'S SAKE MIKE YOU HAD US, US TOGETHER CAN MAKE IT! WE HAD FINISHED IT, YOU AND ME TOGETHER! WITH OUR UNKNOWN TENDENCIES, NO ONE CAN DO IT! WE ARE UNTURNABLE UNCORRUPTABLE BECAUSE WE CANNOT BE CALCULATED!** She laughs and says Maikel we are insane.

What makes us different from what is playing outside now?

Amy changes from angry to sad Maikel sees it happen. *Nothing at all Mikey, we might be worse. We walked away from this.*

*This could have happened to anyone. Everyone can freak out. As we often do. You're right we are no better.*

She walks to the bar sad. And asks Petrus if he can miss something Irish.

Petrus says *yes of course* and pours her a glass of whiskey. The same as that her father always drank Johnny quieter triple black draft. She says thank you and takes a sip, Maikel sits down next to her and says give me one and make it double. Petrus nods and pours the whiskey. When he gives it to Maikel, he takes a sip and throws the rest into Amy's glass. Amy looks at him and asks why Mike? Maikel says:

I made a promise to Chantal that I would never drink again. And I'm planning to keep my promise, other things can be broken, but a promise is not one of them. You decided never to make your father's mistake. And I made a promise to my baby girl. A promise I have to keep. That's something she can be proud of when she's older.

Amy snarls: **Mike do you believe a baby can survive in this world, HERE?**

Maikel: Aims she is six months old and she walks and talks Do you think she can't? Our Tallie is stronger than we think or can ever comprehend. Our Tallie is stronger than we are!

Amy gets tears in her eyes and throws the whiskey away with the sad words: *You're right Mike. You're right. As usual! Stupid wise guy!*

Maikel pats her on the shoulder and asks Petrus do you have any idea what time it is? And where are my children? Petrus replies Mike's time has stopped. I have three clocks here all at the same time six o'clock. But is that in the evening or the morning? Trust me in the morning and he'll show his digital watch. He says ask Dennis, this is from the first day that Aims and I came to live here. Always the same 06:00 every time things happen around 06:00 or something happens that is in proportion to 06:00, difficult to explain. Can't figure out what's up with that time? Did something happen at that time? If you do that, I will look for my children.

Petrus nods pointing at the garden and says: Try it there.

Maikel winks and looks at Amy again and walk to the garden. The regulars are all laughing by apparently something funny. He doesn't understand the joke. He opens the door and sees Justin and Francis throwing a ball with Chantal encouragingly in the green grass. The only green patch he has come across so far. But where first the sun shone so bright now the moon shines. The air is breathable something completely different than outside the pub. There a thin dead air hangs a bit as if the world just died. He had not encountered the moon either.

That is a very beautiful girl. He says to his children looking at the moon. His children run to him.

Chantal is happy again as usual and starts talking again. But he doesn't understand it with the enthusiastic Justin and the simply turned Francis. He hugs his two sons and walks over to Chantal. He

sits down in the grass next to her and puts his ear on Chantal's shoulder. He asks: "What did you say, girl?" Chantal says: " *Daddy is Daddy again back, we are proud of daddy!* "Then he hears that heavy voice again he had not heard for a long time the voice says: **Well look at the perfect family. A mother who understands nothing. The innocence of your children and you, a lying fagot. You should say that this is your fault! Mikey...** Maikel tries to ignore it, but he cannot have his girl and children brought in. He says calmly: "Guys, I'm going back in. It's a little cold here. I'll have something among the members." And he rubs his hands on his chest, saying: "I think I got it in Bomalen." He walks in. He turns around again and smiles at the bad boys and his little girl. When he is inside, he walks over to Petrus and sits down next to him. The regulars look at each other questioningly. Maikel doesn't trust the joke. Why did they laugh like that? And now this? Something is not right here. When he looks outside, he sees all green eyes looking in. They look out of their eyes as if they are hungry. Petrus only laughs when they walk past the window. The green eyes all stay on a small spot in front of the pub.

There are many Maikel is not easily afraid, but these many yellow dots that lurk inside make him shit himself. Waiting for their chance to strike. Maikel is unable to give herself an attitude. It seems as if they can sense or smell his fear, they look even hungrier at every move Maikel makes. When Maikel rubs his eyes and looks out again, they are shaking their heads.

But not at a normal pace, it is moving so fast that he sees the green eyes turning to bright green stripes. All gracefully moving green

stripes, until they all stop moving at the same time. And all look in the same position at the same time. A little tilted head, just a little, but the message gets through to Maikel. They are on the hunt. Maikel looks away and a moment later points Petrus outside. Maikel quickly turns his head with the terrifying thought what are those green eyes doing now? He sees them all standing at the window for about forty. All on a small tiny piece in a row and side by side. It seems as if they are his fans and he is performing in a sold-out hall. He is startled blankly when they all try to break the window at once. They throw everything they can find. And one after the other hits the window with a torn arm or a plank. They even try a car bumper. But the window does not break. They get angrier and angrier every time they hit the window. The blows Maikel Petrus and Amy hear are perhaps the hardest and scariest at the same time. Maikel and Amy have heard bullets fired and they have heard people scream for life.

But this is much worse for them, their children are actually within reach. Within reach of the only lazy even more disturbed than the scolding screaming madmen the world is full of. More dangerous than many a madman can ever get. Amy runs to the garden out of pure fear. Maikel sees the green-eyed smile in the warm light of the burning trees the moment Amy runs away frightened. Petrus says use it Mike remember what that message was? Only he can save us. By that, he meant the Cosanta. **Look at them now now Mike NOW, NOW!**

Maikel blinks but nothing happens. Petrus says the Cosanta sees the righteous of righteousness Mike.



Maikel looks at Petrus, and Petrus shouts: **NO NO DON'T LOOK AT ME YOU CHILD LOOK OUT OF THE DAMN WINDOW FREAKING BLOODHOUND!**

Maikel closes his eyes and walks over to Petrus. Petrus says scared with a sigh. Maikel asks in a calm tone Peet what are you? The heavy voice encourages Maikel and shouts: **that ishis oneheene, that ishis oneheene, that ishis oneheene. Well done Mikey!** Petrus says I don't know what you mean Mike. Maikel takes Petrus by the collar and the regulars don't interfere.

Maikel says here your knights of the elongated bar do nothing at all. Petrus snaps with his fingers and the eyes of the regulars almost immediately turn dark yellow against the orange. The largest one immediately stands up and hits Maikel on his forehead. It is a fist of perhaps thirty-eight centimeters wide. The fist is larger than Maikel's forehead. Maikel is forced to endure that he is almost smashed through the unbreakable window. The man is getting closer and Maikel, who has had hard knocks in his life, did not expect this big bang. He gets up dizzy and has to endure the next one. With which he is knocked with his head through a menu board. Maikel's head is completely red and blue at the same time when pulled from the board. Maikel pulls a small piece of the board away from the wall. The man throws Maikel in between the tables, Maikel doesn't know how, but the moment he falls to the ground he feels strong. Just like when he saw that black mask in the shop window. He looks outside and the green eyes are gone. The fire outside is half-extinguished. The man smashes a bottle of whiskey and approaches Maikel. Maikel smiles as clinically as Amy and those

folks from Bomalen. He says with a smile. Come on, come on, come on. The man quickly walks up to Maikel and tries to stab him. Maikel dodges the bottle with ease and says clinically try again new round new opportunities. The man seems to change his mind. But try it anyway.

Maikel has learned from the speed at which the first attempt arrived and takes the bottle in the second attempt. The man has bigger eyes than usual, and he seems scared. Maikel looks at him intently. He jams the bottle in the man's neck in a moment. With the bottle he runs half-round in the neck of the man, the boiling black blood stuff sprays from the bottleneck like a shit fountain Maikel walks another round and punches the bottle in three blows with the palm of his hand right through his neck away. Maikel asks the regulars: **Look who wants a sip?** While the black stuff comes out through the bottle neck.

*Nobody? This round had been mine boys.*

Petrus points to the garden door and Maikel sees Justin standing there. No worries Peet this boy is used to or not lad? Come over to Daddy. Justin briefly says Dad for a moment. Sure, boy take your time. Maikel says: looking straight at Petrus. Then Justin arrives with the amplifier. Maikel laughs and says look Peet tie my guitarist. Hey, just you won't get far without the guitar, kid. Justin laughs and says well dad that solo you have to wait for. But I have this for you. And he takes his grandfather's dagger from the bottom of the amplifier, he throws Maikel's dagger on the table. Maikel says with

a smile I'm proud of you kiddo. I didn't see it coming. He asks do you have something too?

Justin also takes out the meat hook. Maikel asks how could you do that unseen? Justin answers a few hours in advance. Had a hunch, my hunches are rarely lying lately. Just like, they could have had you dad! Maikel calms down and says no in a serious tone. But they can try it, what do we do with them just? We give them a chance; we give them a chance to defend themselves. But not against us they can prove themselves outside. They have the winning cards but we have the trump card. Maikel laughs and always says an ace in his pocket, boy. You made me proud like a peacock, thank you. The regulars drip off without making a fuss, only Petrus is a tough one. But Petrus knows very well that this is going to be a battle he cannot win, so he walks out quite calmly. Where the madmen are already waiting for them and the moment Petrus comes out, lighting the fire screaming again. Maikel and Justin sit in front of the unbreakable window when Amy enters the bar and asks what are you looking at? Justin says oh nothing mom. Maikel says: Come see for yourself. Amy sits down and with a single look at Maikel, she knows more than enough. She asks did he fuck you over Mike? Like a horse Aims, like a horse! The flames are again bellowing and dancing at their fullest heat. The regulars are frightened when the madmen reappear. But the stubborn Petrus remains. He fights like a lion for his life, but the pack of crazy hungry wolves are too strong for the invincible lion.

And take him to the ground. Petrus faces a force majeure but he still has hope in the fight. Petrus is looking in all the time the fight is

going on. Maikel can only show respect and look away when Petrus is torn to pieces. While Justin keeps looking with a smile on his face. Maikel asks Justin do you enjoy this or something boy? Justin replies: "It may be strange dad, but I have been seeing all that bloodshed all day, have gotten used to it. And I like that it now happens to someone who deserved it!" Maikel asks oh right what did he deserve this end? Justin gives a cold answer: "He tried to wrong the Maro family! And we don't like it, we never will! " Maikel asks what do you think we are La Familia Maro? Even the Mafia has more respect than you just showed! It does have a ring to it kid. La Familia Maro, the shock of Warmermeer... But if you want to be seen this way you have to learn respect and discipline. Without it, our family could never be a cornerstone in this world. In our world how it used to be, the mafia ruled the cities and their inhabitants. But that was not without respect! Not without simple respect to each other and even the competition! You must remember now that we will not be alone with that idea! There will be more people. And to be honest I don't want to compete with the real Familia's because boy then we have absolutely nothing but nothing more! That is disrespectful and disrespectful people do not grow old in this environment.

Justin looks at him indignantly and says: Pa we don't live in the seventies anymore. It is 2019 and the respect for each other has long since disappeared. It is no longer as it once was! There are no codes, there is no honor, and certainly no respect for the competition!

What makes us different from how it was two weeks ago? Why are we disrespectful? We follow the example that has been laid out for us.

*Boy stop! have you looked at how they live in America for example? You just can't compare that to us. Don't even try to compare that life to ours! We are a spoiled people! We never had to fight! Some of us had to, and some in American proportions! He says when he looks at Amy. That is not a life that is not a lead that is simply suffering. Looking over your shoulder every day. Imagine that you have the wrong mess behind your ass! And they simply don't want to leave you alone. Lad every day becomes a fight to stay alive. Every day is survival and every day you live in that fear of losing everything. Everything you love can be lost in two seconds!*

Justin interrupts him with the angry words: Dad what the hell do you know? You may come from a difficult family, but you don't know that you never had! So, don't lie to me! With your whole story of respect, you are disrespectful to his own family!

Amy assists Maikel with the words Justin don't judge you don't know everything male! Justin says angrily: No Mom I don't believe everything. There is a difference! Maikel gets angry but remains calm and says in a calm tone:

*Yes, you are right, I really don't know! But I have seen it a few times on TV. Maybe that's why I thought I had experienced it. Sorry for the lying kid you have enough worries already!*

**MAN KEEP YOUR HEAD UP IF YOU DID. YOU DIDN'T LET PEOPLE WALK ALL OVER YOU! WEAK THAT YOU ARE. AND I WAS THINKING YOU WERE HONEST THE WHOLE TIME. BUT IN THE MEANTIME...**

*No boy you're right! Sorry..*

Maikel looks at Amy and shakes his head, Amy blinks her eyes Maikel knows enough. No old cows are taken out of the ditch. No dormant volcano has erupted. He says thank you. Amy laughs. And how proud she is of him, so turned into a difficult time full of pain and sorrow. But so perfect the perfect man. He was so calm and wise just like that, he was only like that when this rebel was born. If only he was a fraction of the leader he is today.

This rebellious stubborn stubborn sleeper, this mainstay for the kids, and now a shaped leader! She thinks to herself this man deserves a statue! Then she sees Justin angrily leaving the table. Justin looks back angrily again and walks back to the garden. Amy says: "Mike, I don't know what happened but I feel like a murderer was born in a while." Maikel closes his eyes: "We couldn't have stopped this, not with this boy at this time, but I gave the final push. This is my fault Aims. " He falls into a depression Amy sees it happen. Until the moment, she sees it happening. A painful moment, but also a breaking moment. In front of Maikel and Justin but also for Francis and Amy, thoughts go through her head Tallie why Mike. Maikel sees Amy's gaze staring at him. He does not see that look often, but even with her good Amy, there is that look too.

And he sinks further into his depression, thinking about the words of that man on the horse. That man who was very much like one of the four riders and he thinks you were right. I'm dying and feeling guilty. No matter what happens, I will always feel and feel guilt. Until the day I'm dead. And that won't be long. Amy asks hey Mike we have Unknown Tendencies, Justin is developing Homicidal Tendencies, but now you can't have Suicidal Tendencies now Mike. Are you going to get Suicidal Tendencies? You can't do that to us, Mike! Maikel smiles but Amy sees better than anyone that this smile has been forced.

You don't do that to us, Mike! Maikel thinks no girl I do not yet... It seems as if Amy can hear his thoughts, she squeezes her eyes shut and thinks as long as he does not drop dead it is all right. Maikel says I'm just outside for a breath of fresh air. When he sees Justin come in with Chantal in his arms. He gets mad at the sight when he sees Justin holding Chantal. He quickly repairs himself and says sorry just, but Justin looks away. Maikel closes his eyes and tries to hold back on the thought: It is also my own fault I should have been honest with him! About everything that happened. But I was too weak for that. As usual, I was too weak! **ACH WHAT A WEAK MAN WHAT A WEAKLING!** He hears the heavy voice say when he walks out. Immediately when he opens the garden door, he feels the fresh wind coming towards him. But it is no longer as green as the grass used to be. And the moon that shines above the first beautiful garden seems to look down on him angrily. It is his fault! And deep down he knows that too, but sooner or later it would have happened.

This could have happened to anyone. The moon seems to look angrier and angrier at every thought that passes through his head. He knows that he is running away from the responsibilities he has now been given. He knows that he is now fleeing from the realization that it is his fault. He and no one else is guilty! But especially children and Aims are not! And all the other children who are now alone or worse thanks to him.

Then Francis comes out of the shed and asks: "Hey Dad want to toss a ball?" Maikel smiles but deep down he thinks fuck off dirty cunt! Francis looks at him questioningly, and Maikel says: "Yes boy that is nice." Maikel throws three balls over with Francis when he hears Justin's solo. A solo that delivered him from his depression. A solo that delivered him from his anger to his son. Maikel asks: "Fran do you hear that boy?" Francis says happily: "Yes, dad, I hear that then we will have a look at him." Maikel runs inside, immediately when Justin sees Maikel he holds him tight and whispers in his ear: Sorry Dad I didn't know all that! Mom told it a little bit. Sorry! Maikel says thank you to Amy and says play boy, play your solo... Justin starts and Amy says we practiced on this Mike. This is called the reunification. Maikel listens with great pleasure to the song for him and only performed him. The people outside cannot appreciate it that much. As soon as Justin started the solo, they start banging against the windows and shouting inside. Maikel is not bothered and still enjoys the beautiful singing voice of Amy and the beautiful guitar playing of Justin. Amy walks up to him and says: "For you, Mike." Justin says sorry again and immediately when Justin wants to give Maikel a hug they hear the windowpane burst. It sounds like ice is cracking. Maikel says softly to himself:



*Fuck! Fuck! Always when things are going well Fuck!*

Guys we need to get out of here now! Grab Chantal and get out of here. Francis looks at the dozens of madmen who are breaking outside the window. Maikel screams **FRAN Yesterday NOT ABOUT A WEEK, HURRY MAN! COME ON!** Francis calmly says: Dad we have to go to the garden.

How do you know that boy?

Francis freezes as he takes his dagger and Justin hands over his meat hook.

He remembers that Francis had just come out of the barn. He says boys now we have to listen to Francis! Amy nods she picks up Chantal says boys now as they run to the garden. Halfway through the garden, the windowpane bursts and they hear the madmen come into the pub, cursing and ranting. The madmen are fast and furious, they scold, and scream together in such a way that it is completely impossible to understand. When she enters the garden, Maikel immediately hears the heavy voice: **You are not there yet Mikey, far from.** The voice starts laughing devilishly again asking **HOW COULD YOU FORGET? WHAT ARE THE MOST IMPORTANT POINTS MISSING NOW? THEIR END DOES NOT COME BY YOUR HANDS MIKE.**

Maikel shouts: **COME ON BOYS, GET HERE, GET HERE NOW!** They run after the shed in Francis. Francis takes away a heavy box. Maikel helps him on the last bit. When the screaming people enter the garden.

Justin looks outside and sees how the first beautiful garden is completely destroyed in a moment. Justin says scared: "Fra fra fra Fran hurr hurry up boy..." Maikel says calmly: But we can get through this when he shows the opening out through the coal shed. He says Amy and Tallie first then Francis and then you Just. Justin asks scared: "A a and you da da da dad dad?" Maikel answer: La Familia Maro and winks. When Francis crawls through after Amy, it is Justin's turn. Justin struggles to get through the small square. Maikel gives him the final push when Justin hears the disturbed enter the shed. He screams **DAD NO, DAD DAD!** Amy pulls Justin over and says: "Come to the car." Justin slaps around him wildly, but Amy is stronger than him and pulls him along. When they get in the car and want to drive away, there is a knock on the window. It's daddy but she says to the frightened boys. Maikel gets into the car all red with blood, and sits down in the back seat. Justin asks **HOW?** Maikel shows his father's dagger. When a smile appears on Justin's face and says: This crazy guy is really indestructible. Maikel laughs and he asks Justin do you have your defense boy? Justin shows the meat hook and asks: "What do you think, you jerk?" Maikel smiles with approval as Amy drives off. Guys I'm driving a bit slower now. It's too dark to drive fast now. The boys nod. Maikel laughs and says yes Aims take it easy, take your time. First find a spot. Everything will be fine! But deep down, he breaks down with regret. Regret and guilt. Maikel sees the madmen come out of the pub and chase the car. Everything is thrown. Justin asks how Dad? How did you do it, how did you get out of there?

Maikel shakes his head and says: Sorry boy I'm not going to hang a big story on your nose. It is not that big. I was lucky that everything.

Lucky that there were only three, lucky that there were not six or more. He is now somewhere else with his thoughts, for example, how this could happen. On the road, there may be thirteen of those pipes on a square meter. The moment Maikel thinks I don't remember. Maikel's phone rings and it's that unknown number again. He picks up with the words, "Hey you again limpy? My phone is almost empty."

*Mr. Maro, you speak to Donald Wester.* Maikel says yes, I know limp-dick. What is it now? *Mr. Maro, if you don't want to be so insulting on the phone?*

Yes, keep it short will you, there is an end going on here!

*Yes, Mr. Maro, I want to talk to you about that, this has been going on for a long time and I want to give you and your family answers. You don't want another psychosis, right?*

So, you want to offer help? Man, o man what a help craze are you man.

*Mr. Maro, we can offer you answers. And you potential soothing or prescribe tranquilizers.*

Maikel says yes, I thought so bye dead-dick I have to charge my phone. The last thing Maikel hears is: *Do not hang up yet the scans show that you are next...*

Maikel says we have had that too. Aims happens to have a charger in the car here? Amy asks Fran do you want to look in the glove

box? Francis tries but the box has to be opened with a key. He says sorry Mom I can't open it. Amy flips the blinds down on her and Francis and says: What a weird pitch to need a key for but you get in now son. The key falls on Francis' lap. He says thank you, mom, with trembling hands he opens the glove box. He asks scared *how can you stay so calm in these circumstances*. Maikel answer: Well that's a good one... He asks Amy can you explain that to him? Amy thinks for a moment and says:

Yes, I can! You know Fran, we're actually from there already. The end of the world then hey! Look, Justin, I do not understand and I think you also respond well to this. But your daddy has been chased all his life. And thanks to my stubbornness, he came off. She looks at Maikel through the rearview mirror. Immediately she sees a hand coming out of the mirror and screams: **MIKE HELP HE IS THERE AGAIN. THE MIRROR MAN, HE HAS ME!**

Maikel screams: **BRAKE THAN!**

Amy does her best but her foot is nailed to the throttle. She drives off the road into the bushes and drives through three charred trees in the dark evening before finally standing still. She says everything is good, everything is good, everything is good. Maikel says: Jesus man, how happy I am to have Chantal here! But when Amy looks beside her, Francis is hit by a bandaged branch. The branch is in his side. It is not much, but due to the charred black wood, an infection is immediately going on.

Maikel gets a phone call again when Amy picks up this time she hears: *Hello Mr. Maro what do you think of our help?* Amy says **yes yes yes hell hell help on ON US**. While Maikel is already running to the front seat. And Francis tries to help. She hears: *Hello Mrs. Maro it is an honor for me. I am Donald Wester and...*

Amy Frantically interrupts him with the words: **Ma ma ma makes me no no no matter who you you are you hell help me my so so son.**

*Ms. panic attacks are normal after a traumatic event. Try breathing in for four seconds and holding your breath for seven seconds and exhaling for eight seconds.*

**Ma ma ma but me me so son.**

Maikel tries to pull the branch from Francis's side but it snaps and crumbles. She screams: NOOOO! She overhears Donald saying on the other side: *There is nothing we can do at the moment. You have to see it this way he's gone fighting. A real soldier! Congratulations madam, we are sorry!* Then she hears a beep and bursts into tears hysterically.

Maikel is the last thing Francis sees and he closes his eyes. Maikel says furiously it happened! **BUT DO NOT EXPECT HELP FROM THAT SCREWBAG!** Justin tries to calm him down but Maikel is over the point of help. He's looking for some of those screaming screaming pipes to calm his anger. And his wish is fulfilled, seven are approaching. Maikel kisses Amy and says with wide eyes: I'll be right back! He takes his dagger and runs to the first.

People form a wall, but Maikel is much, much stronger than seven madmen, with the help of his dagger. The first falls with a neck wound, the second and third because Maikel jams the dagger in their armpits and turns the dagger over. The fourth fifth, sixth, and seventh run away. They cannot win this fight. Maikel goes loose on the second and if there is no movement whatsoever, he continues with the third. The blood is not visible but can be smelled and felt in the darkness. That oil thick iron-scented source of life. Can be felt and smelled, Maikel continues to stab until there is nothing in them, and everything wasted on the street. Two lives for his son. But it is not enough, far from it. Even the lampposts are the only light source. He sees the blood on his hands, shirt and feels it dripping down his face. The third whispers something in Maikel's ear, he whispers: *Thank you!* The man takes a last breath in a sigh. Justin looks in disbelief at what just happened and bows his head. He finally understands why his father never wanted to watch crime movies. His father is a human werewolf looking for dead blood and destruction. And he closed that part earlier. Now he regrets, even more, the words of earlier. And he closes his eyes guiltily. Maikel walks back to the car. Justin now also smells the fresh blood of that iron air. And guiltily says sorry Dad. Maikel has no message at this time. He puts his wet hand on Justin's head and Justin feels the blood drip down his head.

It is quiet on the street like a funeral or a cremation should go. A pure silence of respect and a bit of serenity, in a dark place. When they bury Francis in a secluded spot close to the car. They fold his hands together and put him in the pit dug with their hands. Maikel puts two euro coins on his eyes and says:

“Yes, lad you have to be able to pay Hermes and Charon or you will never come across that damn Styx. Do your things well boy, and don’t let them get you! I just hope it is enough.” He closes his eyes. Amy would like to say something but she can’t think of it. Justin can only say. Maikel can only think of three things, the first is: Thank you, boy! The second is you were too young! and the third is my fault! I’m sorry lad... Amy holds Maikel tight and says: Thank you, Mike. You did your best! Justin says I’m sorry Dad I’m not out for La Familia Maro I’m sorry! Maikel says boy I don’t care man. You also have to be able to be like this in this world. The world has changed, it has gotten even worse than it was. That is an art in itself! And you are right, there was no respect at all, so I must not imagine illusions of the past. The world has done this to itself. And not me, you, Bud, God, or even NAMTILLAKU but the world has done this itself. The world has destroyed itself by controlling man. People are not leaders.

You cannot lead without honesty to others.

But on the other hand, imagine that the important leaders were once honest with their people. Imagine that! Justin asks is that a good idea dad? No, in that case, the world would have looked even worse than now, Maikel replies. He holds Chantal firmly and she starts to cry. Justin jokes since this started, she hasn’t shed a tear yet. But as soon as you hold her, she starts. Maikel says believe it or not, but everyone cries sometimes. When we couldn’t find a school for you, weren’t you sad or not? But on the other hand, I am happy. In this world, you don’t need an education or job! A few days ago, you were trained to follow.

You literally lined up like sheep brought to the slaughterhouse, to simply clock in for those few pennies. Those pennies that screwed up the world and turned it into the black hopeless place of today. But at the moment there are no bosses or leaders, so you cannot follow anyone or anything. Justin bows his head looks at his mom and dad and says: Yes, dad I see two more that I have to follow to make something of my life. Even if the world or time has stopped You never do that. Maikel nods and tries to laugh, but it is difficult for him. When they arrive at the car, Chantal stops crying. They see them flashing the streetlights in the dark. Maikel stops walking in the bushes. He says: "I just don't trust this man, just stay here for a while." It takes a while, but seconds take a long time in a world without time. Then they hear a can fall on the street.

Justin looks scared from left to right but can't see anything. And starts to clatter the same can, they hear someone playing football with the same can. And with every flash of the lamppost, they see people walking from left to right. They don't scream, they don't scold they are only playing football with that damn can. Justin asks: *Dad they do nothing we will...* Maikel says stay here in a strict whispering tone. Then people come to the dead pipes under the flashing light. A big man asks are these they? A smaller man answers yes that my friends were killed by that loony tune.

The big man screams:

**FIND THAT GUY AND GIVE ME THE KNIFE WITH THAT GREEK INSCRIPTION!**



They hear a man say softly: *well that's nice I don't know Greek*. The big man looks at him angrily and shouts: **SEARCH**

## **THE FREAKING KNIFE WITH THE FREAKING INSCRIPTION NOW!**

Maikel says come on, we shouldn't make a sound out of here. they walk back to Amy and Justin says scared: Mom they found us! Amy sighs and asks is it never over? I am not afraid of Aims Maikel's answer. How many more are to die, Mike?

And what about Chantal? No idea Aims but we will find out along the way. They calmly walk away together. When they arrive at an illuminated bridge they start to run. Chantal starts sobbing at the many bumps and Maikel's firm grip on them. Careful Mike she has to eat and a new diaper but where do we get that? Maikel shakes his head and says I don't know either aims. Supermarket or something? And then? Then those crazies are there. They have been walking against us all day long. The closer they get back to their homes in the residential areas, the more Amy feels the urge to ask Maikel if home is no idea. Maikel wouldn't think that was a good idea. But if she asks well and clearly, he would think it is a good idea. Then Maikel asks the boys I see that we are almost home who is hungry? Amy laughs and says we Tallie Chantal can smile again. Maikel says that is good because I sometimes have to put a little turd. Justin smiles and says yes dad I know the feeling. Amy jokes you don't have your bowels empty yet farted in that pub then? Justin laughs and says after Francis I could no longer stink that guy a little too

much. Maikel says yes, he was good, you are right about that. Amy gets tears in her eyes but laughs at it.

When they arrive at number 67 undisturbed, Chantal has to cry. Maikel and Amy look at each other because they have seen this before. Only with Kerber who was barking madly and growling for number 67. Do you think Maikel asks the same thing?

Amy nods her head and says I didn't want to say it. Maikel withdraws Justin. Justin asks what is leaving me anyway, there is nothing. Maikel holds his finger to his mouth. Chantal no longer cries, she screams. Then the *door opens*. Hi, Mr. Maro, I knew that you would come sooner or later. And you have taken your family with you. Justin introduces himself first: I am Justin this is Chantal and that is my mother and father Amy and Maikel and we are La Familia Maro! Maikel says why man don't do that I don't know this man! You don't even know if this guy can be trusted! The man reassures Justin. *Just leave him boy I've known him longer than today*. Amy looks at Maikel questioningly. He knows nothing about it himself. And ask yes and where do you know me from? *The man says the clinic don't you remember me?* Maikel angrily asks which clinic do you mean husband?

The man says *the clinic evening sun don't you remember?* Maikel asks confused what are you talking about man?

The man asks: *does this seem familiar to you?* And he starts to sing: *Because there was no other way, because there was nowhere else to*

*go because most of us were only welcome in the madhouse! Welcome to the clinic! Welcome to clinic evening sun!*

Maikel looks at him more confused and says man you are more insane than what's going on here!

*Okay Maikel, I am your old coach: Mr. Donald Wester your specialist. And I can assure you that I have the answers you are looking for.* Maikel says oh well I understand I am insane well you should have said that before sir!

*No, on the contrary, Mr. Maro will come in and I'll explain it to you.* When Maikel decides to go inside and soon sees the yellow and green eyes in jam jars on strong water. He sees arms and legs hanging on the walls. With hands and feet that have suspiciously long nails. They look like claws. As he walks in, he sees severed heads on the table with their brains removed. He says Aims please stay there with Chantal! But Amy comes in anyway. The iron blood air now comes from her throat first Maikel and now this guy. The whole house is covered in that damn penetrating iron air. Amy doesn't even smell Chantal's diaper anymore. She looks out her eyes, scared and reluctant. She says: "I actually wanted to ask if I could pee here but I'm afraid now of what I'll find in the jar..." Donald laughs: *Mikey sit down man.* Maikel looks around and everything in the house is blood red and black, the sofa cushions are drenched in the thick black drape of stuff and blood of his victims. Maikel says:

Well sorry man I'd rather be standing. Donald laughs and sits down on the sloshing cushions. *He says yes, you never know if those people have caught something outside.* Maikel: And I just thought I was insane, but this is suspiciously crazy Mr. Wester!

Donald laughs and starts his explanation: *When you were admitted to us you wrote a lot. A lot in your notebook, about the good and evil in this world. And how there was more good than evil. Even though you were so confused and angry you still wrote about the good. But especially how evil would eat your soul until nothing was left. Now I understand what you mean Mike! There is a lot of harm right now, but you have to be above it. Unfortunately, not everyone succeeds.*

Maikel says yes, I can see that friend! But suppose I believe you and your beautiful words about good and evil in your red-black house, what does that say about me? Am I crazy or not? Amy and Justin laugh and at the same time cautiously say that we already knew, sir. Donald laughs and says no Mike you're not crazy yet. But I'm afraid what the effect of this story will have on you. That's why I wanted to speak to you so much. Maikel says hey before you start your explanation do you want to turn the eyes a different way? I feel like they can still see me and follow me a bit. But of course.

He gets up and the cushions start sloshing like a crashing wave slosh against the rocks of the dead sea. He walks to the eyes and turns them in the direction of Amy. Chantal gets big eyes and starts screaming again. Donald says: *Calm down and everything will be clear.* Chantal seems to calm Donald's voice. Amy thanks him and he sits down on the sloshing pillows again. He says:

*So, Mike you must have heard of the Alithea society, right? no not really never heard of even says Maikel. Donald continues his story with the words:*

*That is strange Mike your father was there too! The society of Alithea actually means that you repel everyone to get the wisdom of life. Also, your own family. When I read in your notebook what you had done and why, I immersed myself, as it were, in the dark side of life. Your father was a member of what is now also called a sect. They actually didn't do anything wrong but they have raised something through their prayers to a god named **NAMTILLAKU**! They asked for eternal life and your father got away with that when you took his life. You can only get eternal life through death. Tell me Mike have you run into him yet?*

Maikel answers yes once or twice. He even bit Amy. While Amy asks was that sir?

*With that it happened the bite, you have to get the poison out somehow. I have no way for that. But that's the poison of the ouroboros. That initiates the end of the world.*

*Maybe it's been in your system for too long.*

*How long has it been?*

Amy says three or four days. Maikel joins Amy and says four days of honey.

*Then it has been in your system for too long. And the bite has led to the end of the world. Not your fault Mike's not Justin Am's or anyone else's even **NAMTILLAKU's!** But the end is a fact we can agree on.*

*The ouroboros used to be known as a warning for the danger behind some doors and walls. Hades's place. And the ouroboros has tried to warn But people are stubborn. It is in our nature and mindset.*

During the story of Donald, Maikel falls over. He sees the blood-red floor approaching him. When it hits the floor, the lights go out. In the beginning, there is nothing but black, just pitch black. Then he sees the moment when he flees from his parental home. With nothing but a bicycle and a dagger. The blood on the knife has not yet clotted when he puts it in his coat pocket. Confused, he runs away, far from home.

Having killed the greatest evil, he comes across an old remote forest, near a parking lot a few towns away. He sees a car and he hears a struggle. He initially stops. He thinks no you don't do that you just got your dad already... No, I don't do anything. He decides to continue cycling. But when he hears a cry for help, he quickly turns around. That girl is too beautiful he changes his mind when he cycles back. **HE WILL HELP HER, THAT FUCKER STAYS WITH HIS HANDS OFF THAT GIRL!** Aggressive and emotional, he arrives at the two. The girl is lying on the floor of the parking lot with that pervert on top of her. Maikel can only think of one thing and I kill him.

He screams: **GET AWAY NOW OTHERWISE I KILL YOU JUST LIKE ME PA EARLIER!**

## Chapter X.

### *Lost.*

The man looks at Maikel with bright green eyes and says: *I have done nothing wrong. You have to believe me!* Maikel asks to believe what? The man answers: *She is evil. Her father doesn't hit her for nothing you know.*

Maikel sees the girl without pants lying on the cold street tiles of the parking lot. And shows his dagger and asks in plain language: knife or knuckles? The man desperately makes his choice and chooses the knuckles. Maikel lets himself go completely. And the man accepts it. When the girl comes to, she feels that there is a wet place between her legs. Then the man says: Sorry I did not know what happened to me. The man sees that Maikel walks up to the girl and gives her the knife. The man begs *no, no she is evil.* She walks over to the man and says thank you to Maikel. She takes off the

man's pants and puts the dagger in the back of his scrotum and winks, the man begs and begs. Then she cut off his left ball. The man cries out in pain. And she asks Koos this hurts?

Then she stabs the dagger in his leg and says let this be a lesson even the bogeyman can lose his influence. I am no longer afraid! She puts the dagger in his other leg.

Maikel can see that she is far from finished. He just lets her think. But judging by the man, he walks towards the end, so Maikel walks up to her and asks: can I have my knife back? The girl says I'm almost ready puts the dagger in the man's stomach, turns the dagger around, pulls it out, and gives it back to Maikel. She says thank you, I can't thank you enough. The boy says tell me your name. Thanks enough. The girl puts on her pants and says I'm Amy and who are you? Maikel shakes her hand and says I'm pleased to meet you I'm Maikel. They run away together. Maikel gets on the bike and she jumps on the back. She explains that she does not want to go home. Maikel understands her and promises her a better life. He promises her one life as few have had. Including cottage, animals and kids. A house is now the most important thing, he says. Soon their wish comes true and they get a house somewhere in a suburb. A corrupt place Maikel's past haunts him on every street corner and he finds himself back in an old habit. There are just too many temptations, the excuse is, and he's on drugs again. After much urging and begging from Amy, he only stops when Justin is born.



Only that was not so easy as the past cannot leave you alone. He needs Amy's help and leaves Justin alone for an afternoon. When he comes home drenched and wet with blood, he takes a glass of whiskey and sits on the couch with Justin in his bloodied hands. He promises Justin to never touch it again or even think about it. When Amy comes home, she tells Mike this was a one-time thing. While she stores her revolver. Two years later they get Francis. And everything is as it should be. It is a feeling of pure happiness. He gets a smile on Donald Westers' floor.

Then he hears Amy calling **Mike Mike help NO NO MY GIRL! NOT...** He hears a suffocating sound. When he opens his eyes drunk, he sees that Donald is strangling his Amy with a dog leash. Before he can even think anything, he pulls an arm off the wall and hits Donald on the head with it. And again, and again until Donald goes to the ground and falls on the table with his jaw. Donald looks up to see Maikel standing next to Amy with the crying Chantal in their arms. Donald's jaw is dislocated, he is still trying to speak, but that is no longer possible. Donald Frantically pulls his jaw. And keeps on pulling it manically. Amy says come, Mike, we're going. But Maikel doesn't want to go not yet! He takes the same arm off the ground again and hits Donald's kneecaps. Donald moans and screams inaudible.

Donald stands up and Maikel sees that black stuff forms in the corners of his mouth. Donald becomes inhumanly strong. He throws Maikel in the corner, while Donald laughs hysterically. The jaw hangs on a muscle while Donald laughs drowsy. The flesh quickly rots away from Donald's body. Even the muscle that held the jaw

quickly rot away. The jaw falls on the glass table. Justin rams the meat hook between his ribs and pulls it out again. He pulls his half rib cage along in his strength. Maikel stabs the dagger in the chest of Donald where his heart should be. They hear a hissing sound and see Donald turned into a black dripping bubbly. At that moment, people are at the door shouting:

**OPEN THIS DOOR NOW! WE KNOW YOU ARE AT HOME!**

**Knock knock..** They hear someone else say *who's there?* then they hear the first again **final**. And then the second *final who?* then they hear the first scream again **FINALLY FOUND THE KNIFE!** The second says *I don't get it.*

Then the door is kicked in and they enter. Maikel Justin and Amy with Chantal in their arms flee through the back door. The madmen are tearing up the entire house searching for the knife.

They run through the garden to freedom. Even the garden is not normal. There are holes and graves everywhere. There are poor legs and guts throughout the garden. When they think they escape through the gate door they slip. Amy falls to the point where she can still safely hold Chantal. Donald had apparently taken that into account. He placed a plate full of intestines in the opening of the gate door. The madmen come running into the garden, there are far too many. They are with a force majeure. Maikel tries to get up but also slips again holding a liver in his hands. Justin is the first to escape Amy and Maikel doesn't come much later. The madmen almost all jump over the plate. And come after them screaming and

ranting. Maikel screams **COME ON BOYS WE'RE ALMOST HOME!** And asks **SOMEONE AN IDEA HOW WE LOSE THEM ANY IDEAS? Follow me, dad!** Justin runs through all the surrounding gardens. Maikel and Amy follow. Amy holding Chantal convulsively says **guys I can't hold on any longer!** Justin says no mom you don't give up **YOU MAY NOT REST!** Amy sighs and takes a look behind her. She sees that the insane are far away behind them, and Justin takes a turn in a garden at once. Maikel and Amy follow him and find that there are loose boards in the fence they can go through.

Maikel gasps *how did you know that man?* Justin whispers little *secret of me and Francis!* Amy crawls through it first, followed by Justin and Maikel. Amy says indignantly Mike we're home.

We finally are home. When they walk into the house and close the kitchen door behind them, they hear the crazy people in the port behind the garden saying: where are they?

**WHERE ARE THOSE ASSWIPES? WE MUST HAVE THAT KNIFE...**  
***Damn, they, got, away.***

They hear the madmen run away. Amy says oh Tallie, how sweet you are! Well, girl you finally get a clean diaper. She walks upstairs to the bathroom. Maikel says: *She can do it better than me now. that would stink.* Justin smiles and hugs him. Home safely, Amy immediately pushes the diapers in a bag. Chantal shouldn't be without it for so long, she says as she walks downstairs with Chantal in her arms. Maikel stares at the empty terrarium, but all thoughts are currently going out to Francis. And where he is now

heaven hell or emptiness. Amy says heaven. Maikel says I don't know. Justin thinks hell. Otherwise, the world would never have looked like this, Dad? Amy immediately silences Justin. Because you should not talk like that and especially not about your brother. Nothing but good about the dead, she says. Imagine they come to haunt Just imagine. She says that reminds me of a legend I heard a long time ago. Maikel lights the fireplace and Amy tells the legend of:

### **The uncelebrated Halloween on a full moon.**

It started as a normal Halloween. but on Halloween, the veil between life and death is the thinnest of October. Besides, the moon shone completely.

There was a friend of mine ... I called sad head or sad dog. But had such a pure Dutch name.

Klaas sadmon or sadhof for my part Sadner what I care about that. Well, a sad dog, therefore, walks wasted and I mean wasted drunk to his nearest pub. It was not that difficult because the sad dog lived above it. Well, when he finally came to his pub after a long long way. He ordered a Grolsch bracket. You know such a popper. And while everyone in the pub spilled and drank on the dead. He only continued to pop with that popper. Everyone told him not to fool the dead. Because the dead have the power to find everyone! But he did not lift all that heavy on the warnings and continued quietly. The people in the pub all heard something inexplicable. Everyone sometimes asked you heard that. But the sad dog heard nothing.

Not once, just nothing. And just pop and pop he had such a great party.. Until he heard something. And only he saw a hand come out of the ground. At first, he thought he had just done something wrong. Two minutes later he saw more hands rise out of the ground.

He asked help I have to hand it to him. But people said he had been disrespectful to the dead and had to accept his punishment. I agree with them. Remember that the dead are above the living. He popped one more time and was pulled down the floor of the pub.

Not by one or two hands, but by all the hands of the people he had hurt or betrayed in his life. The people in the bar saw him disappear into the ground through perhaps fifty hands. He called one last thing. And that was watch out. The dead must be respected at all times. He cried out in pain. And the story is that for several years now he has been suffering uninterruptedly in the deepest depths of hell. Why I tell this story is because. You may be twelve years old now but always remember that rule. The dead must be respected at all times. Especially because of those who care about the dead. Or woe to those who disrespect the dead!

Justin says I liked your former legends more Mom.

Amy smiles and hysterical again, just like the first night. Justin says quietly when Amy walks up to him laughing. And she says hysterically: **I remember one of them! do you already know the one of the disrespectful son?** Justin says Mom take it easy. **Easy? I**

**will be disrespectful to you!** Justin says scared, Mom please take it easy. I'm sorry I loved Francis. I still love him.

Maikel stands in front of the frightened trembling Justin and says Aims he has understood now. Amy starts laughing again, but now normal. Just now you really have to know your mother. Amy bursts out in tears saying our Francis is just in heaven. Believe me! Justin says okay okay I believe your mom but don't do this joke again. Chantal laughs and says: Mom kidding. Amy says yes mom just kidding. Maikel laughs it out Justin vibrates a bit. Amy starts laughing too. Then the screaming madmen walk down the street, looking for the knife. Maikel says calmly you guys Tallie too! Do you hear that? They hear three arguments:

**Find that freaking knife!** *kitchen knife any good? Why does it necessarily have to be that damn knife?*

***Because that knife is somehow very important! I know it's a needle in a haystack, but we have to have it in the most retarded way. DEAD OR ALIVE BUT WE GET THAT KNIFE!***

*Go screw yourself, man! Why should we go looking for something without knowing what it looks like? We only know there is something on it. **AND IT'S GREEK! WHO OF US CAN UNDERSTAND GREEK?***

They hear the scolding walking down the street.

Maikel tries to turn on a lamp. The bulb gives a flickering effect and falls out. He sees a shadow on the ground come from under the

walls. He wonders where it comes from. But when he asks what time is it, boys? He quickly loses his cool with the answer: We don't know Dad! He's thinking about where that shadow came from. He walks to the basement without saying a word. And tries to turn on the light there, but the light doesn't work anywhere. He thinks no light means no electricity and gas, which means no water and that means no bills. So, no more work or school. And he realizes that he only now lives in the free world without rules. That gives him a soothing feeling of pure laziness. He takes the crowbar from the box in the back of the basement, where he first saw Bud.

And remembers Bud all too well, which makes grabbing the crowbar easier. He thinks to himself: Buddy how did it get to that boy? Why did we keep the winning cards but did you have the ace? Well done kid! He walks up the stairs to the corridor and walks in with the crowbar. He soon sees that Amy has already lit some candles. She says hey Mike it's 22:22. Maikel looks at her in bewilderment and asks in a calm tone how do you know that? She shows the digital table clock to Maikel. The clock says 22:23 Maikel says cheerfully: Thank you Aims! He just asks how? Amy shakes her head and says I don't know either Mike but it's 22:23 now... What are you doing with that crowbar Mike?

Maikel laughs and says you will find out. He walks to the wall that crosses the corridor where he saw the shadow appear. With a few striking blows from the crowbar, he smashes half of the bearing wall. Soon he sees all those dead black parasites and leeches falling out. A few still have convulsions while being eaten by the cannibalistic others. Maikel calls Amy in and asks Aims do you see

this too? Amy only sees half the wall still in place and says no Mike I don't see that. At least not what you see, I think. Maikel laughs and says I was afraid of that.

**No Ifitheach Cosanta or Huginn and Muninn but the power of perception.**

Aims focus on this and say what do you see. **That is what Donald meant by saying with the society of Alithea...** The society of truth. Aims focus on the truth. The truth of what's inside these walls, the same as the mirror world. You did that too.

You can do this! Amy looks at the wall and sees nothing yet, but feels something crawling up her pants. She is shocked. Maikel says well so Aims to focus. At those words, her eyes change to a bright purple color, and she sees the bloodsuckers and parasites crawling on the floor. With a smile on his face, Maikel says yes Aims **the power of perception!** Amy laughs as hysterically as the first night and says hysterically:

**Take them away Mike! Take them away Mike! GET THE DAMN ITCH AWAY MIKE!**

Maikel says no Aims sorry but this is the truth. Amy's legs are covered in parasites, she freaks out. But they seem to multiply on her legs with every move she makes. She starts to scream and at that moment there is a knock on the door.



**Mommy open that door! We know you are at home! Knock knock *who's there?* Knify! *Knify who?* Knify is ours? Yeah damn now I again don't get it! Boy we found the knife! *Oh, we got it. We've got it. We've got him. We've found it. Open it soon madam otherwise, there will be a lot of stuff in your pants!***

Amy says **that is already happening jerk.** She takes the crowbar from Maikel and Maikel takes his dagger. Justin walks over with his meat hook and opens the door first. Maikel is the first to stab one in his stomach and pull the dagger up to his throat. Justin is the second to stab one on the back of his neck and the other through his neck pulling the meat hook towards him so the neck breaks.

Amy is looking for the one with the biggest mouth to grow his head with the crowbar. With itchy skin and bugs in her hair, she finds one. She immediately goes crazy on the head of the cursing madman.

He has a long fence board and the moment he wants to hit Amy is ahead of him: she hits him on the temple with the smaller crowbar and he goes down. When he is lying down, Amy continues to punch until there is nothing more than chunks of blood and pieces of bone screaming:

***GET THE ITCH OFF! GET THE ITCH OFF! GET THAT FREAKING ITCH OFF!***

# Chapter XI.

## The Answer.

Maikel sees three crazy people running away with the words: *This is a crazy, man quickly get out of here. This is not worth my life. Not for a knife that I can't even read the inscription on. Get the fuck out of here!*

All three run away. Maikel walks over to Amy and hugs her. He says thank you Aims thanks to you they are gone. Amy just screams: **GET THE ITCH AWAY! GET THE FREAKING ITCH OFF MIKE!** She starts crying and begs: *Please get rid of the itch Mike...* Maikel holds her tighter and says calming: *Focus on not having an itch. Then you don't have it anymore.* Amy begs: *Mike how am I supposed to do that?* Maikel answers the power of perception Aims. But you really have to want it and support it 100%. Amy tries and it fails the first time. But the second time she closes her eyes she succeeds. She says thank you, Mike, thank you. Maikel laughs: Our mind guides our brain. Our brain is the engine of our thinking ability.

But if you can tell your brain that ordinary life and thinking is the real fantasy, and the unusual and the unusual is reality, then you are the strongest woman on the earth. **So, then you can also use the power of perception differently than you might think.**

You can control your emotions with this and you can, for example, get rid of a pain or a itch. Amy has a hard time looking at him. And did not understand a word she only understands that her itching is finally gone. Justin is at a distance listening to his father's advice. And sees for the first time his father as a wise man. He walks over to Maikel and Amy and says come on guys we're going back inside. Maikel smiles and walks back into the house hand in hand with Amy and Justin. When he comes to the half-destroyed wall, he sees that the parasites and leeches have duplicated two men. Koos and pope are now in his room with bright green eyes and staring with Bud like injuries. Amy also sees them and Justin can also see them. Justin gets scared of Koos and Amy brings back memories of Koos. She says scared: *Mikee...* Maikel says I see them too. Justin says scared yes mom I see them too. That's the creepy man from that mansion I talked about. Maikel tries to stab Koos but all he hits is green-yellow smoke. The radio turns on and he hears the song from the petting zoo.

*I need to endure in this life. I need to endure for my wife. I need to endure for my kids. I need to endure of that I'm sure.*

*You can't kill me but I dare you to try. And when you look up in the sky. I just hope you ask yourself why. Why can't I die.*

Maikel gets stuck but all he hits is smoke green-yellow smoke. He hears Chantal crying, then the radio turns on again. With the volume at its loudest.

**I warn you. I warn you. I warn you. I warn you I won't die  
I won't die I won't die.**

With each **DIE**, Amy becomes more scared and scared while Koos gets closer and closer. He walks right through Maikel. And grabs Amy. Amy hears his voice in her head. But when she looks at him, she sees Bud. He says: *Justin looks more and more like me!* Koos looks as mutilated as Bud. But Amy immediately recognized him. Her boogeyman Koos just Koos. Amy is paralyzed with fear at that dirty man. With his cheeks cut open and carved religious texts all over his face. There is a black horse on his right eyelid. Gray horse on his forehead. On his chin is written red horse and on his left eyelid is a white horse. His whole face is covered with carvings: Judas saw the lamb.

Amy was already afraid of Koos but now she has the chills of that guy. And now he even dares to announce that Justin is his. No, **NO KOOS! WE WILL NOT DO THAT! JUSTIN IS NOT YOURS!** She hits him with the crowbar. She cuts straight through Koos. Every time the crowbar passes through him, she hears a scream. A hellish scream that must come from the deepest depths of hell. It seems like only Amy can hear it. She goes on and on. She sees every time the crowbar passes through Koos the same smoke as Maikel saw before. But to her, it seems that the crowbar's iron does it more than Maikel's metal blade. While hitting Koos a few more times. The green smoke spreads all over the house when Amy's arms get tired of hitting the heavy crowbar.

Koos looks at her with a smile as the green-yellow smoke transforms him into the boogeyman from her past. She calls Maikel to her but soon sees that she is back in the parking lot with Koos on top of her. She screams and screams but Koos does not get rid of her and asks her:

*The second time is always better am I right? Leftovers are always tastier than the original food.*

He slaps her forehead between her eyes again, with that much too big fist.

And she sees nothing but dark, dark and black. That guy took away her sight with one hit. She gets scared of herself, she thinks that she is blind. I am blind. That guy made me blind. I don't see anything at all. Her eyes open slowly and sparkles by light plays with her eyes in such a way that it dazzles her. She hears Maikel's voice say Aims, Aims listen to me you are in a trance. You are in shock Aims. Listen carefully don't believe what you see now. And listen to this advice:

**Fear is the murderer of the mind!** Aims tell me after **Fear is the murderer of the mind!** Say after me Aims!

Amy blinks and screams ***Fear of the murderer the mind!***

She sees Maikel and Justin standing up above her, looking down. Amy's hearing is nearly diminished, but she hears Justin laugh and say "Dad you're great." Maikel says "No great is your mother!"

Amy kisses Maikel and she starts to hear Chantal again, she is crying. Amy laughs and says: "I'm home." *Fear is the murderer of the mind!* She whispers again. Amy gets up and sees that it is dark outside. She asks: "Fran, where's Fran?"

Maikel: "He didn't make it!" Amy collapses and cries hysterically: **Francis Francis Fran no no no! HOW MIKE HOW?**

Aims it was an accident. A car accident.

**A CAR ACCIDENT HE COULDN'T DRIVE MIKE! WHO DROVE?**

*I was driving Aims. I drove alright?* Justin interrupts his father and says: "No Dad you didn't drive!" Maikel arches his head while Amy looks around in confusion and asks confusedly: *I was driving didn't I Mike?* Maikel's eyes are starting to water, and a single tear falls when Justin says: "Yes Mom you were driving!" Amy bursts into tears. She tries to dry her tears. But there are too many. Too much to wipe out everything comes out. Maikel is holding her. But Amy doesn't want to hear about it. She says menacingly: **Away Mike away now!** Maikel replies: "No I'm not going anywhere! Have you not looked around yet, it is the end of the world as we know it." Amy looks around her. She walks to the windows and unties the curtains. It is dark outside. The street lamps are not lit. The surrounding houses almost all collapsed. The trees are on fire. The pavers have all been removed, there are holes in the ground where the street once was. And her car is nowhere to be seen. The street is gray and bleak.

The only thing that gives light is the orange-red light of the dancing flames of the burning trees. She looks at Maikel and asks in a single word, "Chantal?" Maikel picks her up and says in a calm tone: *Here she is! Tallie, look girl.* Amy clings to Chantal, she asks: "Are you all right, girl? Are you all right, girl?" Maikel immediately thinks of his dream on the eighth day when Justin and Francis pulled Chantal in such a way that she snapped in half and fell to the ground. Such an atmosphere now also hangs around his Aims. He now relives the same feeling as he felt in his dream. Then Justin grabs hold of Chantal and says: "Mom you're pressing her neck too hard." He tries to pull Chantal free from his mother's grip.

Maikel thinks to himself oh no that flight is canceled.

He angrily walks towards the two and in a single movement pulls Chantal away from Amy and Justin. That fall to the ground together. They start laughing, each more hysterical than the other. They don't stop. Maikel walks upstairs to her room with Chantal. Amy and Justin follow him laughing. He puts Chantal in her crib and covers her. Amy stops laughing in the doorway and Justin is still laughing in the landing. Amy takes a small one table from the end of the landing and knocking off a leg. When Maikel comes out of the nursery, he is hit on the head with the table leg.

And the last thing he sees is that Amy turns against Justin and Justin turns against Amy. He is trying to get up but for some reason he cannot get up. Amy hits Justin with the table leg on the head. And Justin hits Amy with everything he can get his hands on. But Amy is too strong for him. Maikel hears Justin say, "Mommy stop!"

But Amy doesn't stop and hits harder. So hard she knocks him down the stairs.

Maikel shouts:

**Gups gups stop everything alright? Gups no I can't do it no,  
stand up!**

He hears bumbling downstairs and then he hears laughter again. He looks at Chantal and says: "Sorry girl." he hears someone walking up the stairs.

He sees Amy and Justin walking towards him together. Amy is holding the table leg while Justin is holding his meat hook. Justin's head is covered in holes and bumps. The blood drips down from his chin. While Amy smiles and screams at Maikel with bright green eyes:

**EVERYTHING'S GOOD MIKE! YOU FAST ENOUGH JOIN YOUR  
MOM PAPP AND SON! BYE-BYE!**

She hits him on the back five times with the table leg. Which opens his old wounds again. Justin is laughing and waves his meat hook in the air. Amy hits the back with the table leg a sixth time. Maikel gets up. His black sweater gets wet at the back. And the thick blood slowly drips down. He is trying to get the table leg. But he does not succeed. He has too much trouble with his back. Then she strikes him three times against his legs. Maikel falls over again.



But quickly get up to shouting: **NINE TIMES NINE TIMES NINE TIMES!** He is laughing **NINE NINE NINE! NINE NINE NINE! NINE NINE NINE !!**

Amy says calmly: *Welcome Mike, Welcome!* Justin smiles and walks into Chantal's room. Chantal starts to scream: Her screams bring back Maikel. He sees Justin hanging over Chantal, pushing the meat hook into her face. He has a smile from ear to ear on his destroyed and broken head. When he looks at Maikel he says something: "**Faciam te diaboli semen!**" he presses the meat hook under Chantal's eye, and he pushes the meat hook into her face. Before he can scoop out Chantal's eye, Maikel is ahead of him. He hits Justin with the table leg on the back of the head. He falls down, a pool of blood forms. The blood almost immediately turns black and starts to bubble under Chantal's cot. She screams **NILAI, NILAI COME HELP!**

Maikel sees a blue and purple eye looking at Amy and disappears from the room with Chantal in the blink of an eye. Amy only sees two bright purple eyes by the crib. The eyes blink and are gone. Amy screams **WHERE ARE YOU?** She searches the room but there is nothing to see. She feels a sense of pure impotence. But fear consumed her. She walks down, she has Justin on his hair while she walks down. And sit in front of the TV. She looks at the snow but soon sees Bud's head appearing on the TV. She asks: "Hey buddy, how are you?" Bud crawls out of the TV and even though the lights and lamps are off, the pears burst in the socket. The flat-screen TV falls over and the radio switches on. She hears the old song from the past come back. *Blood on my knife.*

*No matter if you're a potato peeler. No matter if you're a hunter. There's always gonna be blood on your knife sooner or later. No matter what road you're on. No matter what street you're on. No matter what road or street you come from.*

*We all have to face the rules of life. We all have to face the fools in life. Some people beg some people pray. Prayers are for the broken down. You can beg to your god there's always gonna be blood. On my knife.*

*You have the evangelist religious and other scum. You have the streetwalker and the nightcrawler.*

*You have the beggar and the priest. You might have god on your side I know the beast.*

*You know him or you don't. You know him only through stories or you know him well. But everyone knows the lore. Everyone has their own stories to tell and soul to sell. **And everyone goes to the kingdom of hell, where he rules forevermore.***

*There is always gonna be blood on my knife. I'm the taker of life, everyone has their price. **But I choose who lives and dies.** No more light when even your deepest fantasy dies. We all have our price, everyone lies and everyone dies. Everyone knows the lore. Everyone has their own stories to tell and soul to sell.*

*And everyone goes to the kingdom of hell, where he rules*  
***FOREVERMORE!***

Bud gives her a bread knife and points at her throat. Amy puts the knife to her throat and she wants it so badly. But not without a fight. She wants to die so badly. There is no Francis no Justin no Maikel and Chantal anymore. All that remains is Bud the Scary Mutilated Bud. But she has always thought of everything for a reason. What is this reason? Her hand starts to tremble and she thinks this is not real. Then she hears Bud say in a heavy demonic voice **Are you sure?**

She throws the knife away a scream **YES, I KNOW YES! FEAR IS THE MURDERER OF THE MIND! *Fear is the murderer of the mind! Fear, fear is fear...***

She thinks about how time would be better. Where did this happen? She falls over on the big sofa. Bud even laughs in her subconscious mind she sees Bud's teeth appear in his open cheeks. There is a knock on her door, but Amy sleeps. The screaming madmen kick in the door. And wake her up. They are holding Maikel's father's knife, and a madman is cutting her across her eyes.

While there are four holding her. The cutting madman screams **YES YES YES YES YES, CUT HER, CUT HER, CUT HER OPEN.** While he continues to cut and cut her. Amy screams Amy screams but when she has finished screaming and screaming, and the light disappears from her eyes, the madmen also disappear. She wakes up in a bed in a white room. No color, only white. Asleep, she tries to get out of bed. She finds out that she is tied up with her arms and legs. She tries to break free but she can't. The tears start to form this is the end.

The realization that there is no tomorrow will destroy her inside. While she looks around her even more afraid than before. She sees a camera pointed at her. She hears someone walking by with a large bunch of keys. The keys clatter every step of the way.

The clatter gets closer and closer until it stops. The clatter stops right outside her door. A key goes into her lock, and the lock is turned. It doesn't look like it, but it is a solid strong heavy door. A man enters with a white coat. The man says: "Welcome back to the land of the living Maria." Amy screams confused

**NO NO DO NOT CUT ME PEASE! WHERE ARE MY CHILDREN? WHERE IS...**

*Maikel?* The man asks. Amy says hysterically, "where's Mike at?"

The man is looking seriously and asks: "Don't you remember Maria? Come on you must know, **you must!**" Amy sobs, "Why the fuck are you calling me Maria? I'm Amy! " The man Apologize and ask, "Sorry madam, Amy who if I can ask?" Amy: I'm Amy Elisabeth Maro! the man fetches a folder of papers: "I have your file here, Mrs. Maro. Would you please want to see if this is you? " Amy tackles the file: "No this is not me, this is not me, **THIS IS NOT ME!** Where's a mirror?" The man takes a small dentist's mirror out of his breast pocket. "Aren't you Maria?" Amy looks confused in the little mirror and says:

"Yes, I am Yes. Are Maikel and I married, sir? " The man "No you are not married. Maikel is your son. Do you remember murdering your husband and son?

Think carefully, please Maria think carefully! " Maria sees it happening before her eyes. How her husband came home from the pub smelling of beer and cigarettes. How Maikel had done it with him, and how he hit him and her. Maikel who cried and cried, "I am not the antichrist. I am not him! *No ouch no pappa pappaaa no!* "She sees before her eyes that Maikel kills his father with his own dagger. And how she said:

"That's a good boy. Oh, you missed a spot. My dear antichrist, I love you boy!"

How she cleaned up the blood and gave the final push by setting him on fire on their own bed. How Maikel was just watching TV quietly and then left without saying anything. How Maikel saved that girl. She has seen everything. But then that day they went too far. Then that day when Maikel murdered for that girl. Just to get off a path. The first she walked to the girl Amy from behind and cut her throat with a bread knife. While she was busy shooting. And then when Maikel, her Mike got into the car, she strangled him from the back seat. She sees how she stayed in the car. And how she was brought to the headquarters by the police. How her case-law concluded after a psychological analysis that she suffers from: manic depressive/psychotic PTSD with schizophrenic delusions.

How she was called a woman of Unknown Tendencies by the judge and sentenced to 12 years of loonybin. The man asks: "Do you remember Mrs. Maro?" Maria laughs:

***Yes, everything is clear now!***

She looks at the doctor with bright green eyes and asks: *Do you have something to live for Mr. Wester?* The doctor: "How do you know my name?" Maria: **Oh, come on Donald!**

*Because there was no other way because there was nowhere else to go, because most of us were alone. Welcome to the madhouse! Welcome to the clinic! Welcome, all to the **evening sun clinic!** "*

Donald runs out of the room and locks the door again. The last thing Maria hears him say is: "This is really a woman with:

*Unknown Tendencies!*

*The End...*

*This legend stops where thousands upon thousands have just been born. Only to be found by us. And by us alone. We the people give the legend the power they all deserve. Piece by piece.*

*Yes, you too, and even you back there! The silent and rugged waters of life have been described time and time again in many a legend. Love the betrayal or even a purely anxious existence all is described by many people on the street. Everyone has a legend to tell.*

*People I hope you enjoyed this legendary legend. This is not a legend like most.*

*This legend has everything.*

*And perhaps, more importantly, it contains my version of the truth! People look around you. How black is the world, how gray is the grass?*

*How many bridges and building s destroyed, how many churches burnt down? How many children killed? This is a contemporary story.*

*This is the story of what preceded the darkest time humanity has  
ever known. the end!*

*The end of our world of our living and beliefs. I am happy that I  
was able and allowed to share this story with you.*

*I am aware that it took a long time. And most of you have  
already walked out of the group tired. I thank the other people  
who stayed for listening. The campfire has already been  
extinguished three times.*

*But you stayed with me to hear the truth. About a cursed child,  
about a man and woman who were familiar with Unknown  
Tendencies. A woman who has lost everything. Even her mental  
health. But in a way, it has turned out to be a hero. This is not a  
fairytale fairytale's do not exist. This is telling the truth as it  
should be told.*

*Plowing down and going up and down with ups and downs,  
with a woman who gave up for her family, and unfortunately,  
her family but especially her mental health is lost.*

*Epilogue....*



*I want to thank you again for your time. I did my best to put it in the best possible way. And including everything, I managed quite well. When I first heard about this legend six months ago, I knew I had to share it with the world in an easy way.*

*You are the people who hear this legend for the first time. But I hope by no means get over it. I wish you a pleasant evening with a lot of satisfaction. And a soft night full of love. Because lying alone in your bed is also so alone.*

*Some questions would have remained. And I am happy to answer those questions for you.*

*Of course, I will not give you my phone number before I am called by some crazy people.*

*Believe me it is nice, but it is annoying for you in the long run. I provide my email address namely:*

*write.to.bennie@gmail.com.*

*Website/shop: <https://bjstarink.com>*

*Twitter: @LurvenGrijper*

*I hope I captivated you too. But you will, because you belong to the small group that stayed with me from start to finish. And has heard me bumbling to get it across clearly, which could sometimes lead to a laugh in this overwhelming darkness that the world now unfortunately knows.*

*I am closing now because telling this legend takes a lot of strength and determination.*

*Anyway, a lot of discipline so thank you all and I will see you again later.*

*If I heard another story worth spreading... I wish you a pleasant evening and a quiet calm night...*

*I think I will see you again, with kind regards Bennie.*

*A word of appreciation. (Because I think I should)*

*First, you the reader! I am very pleased that there are still people who love/read a book.*

*The second one I want to thank is my mom. For supporting while writing. And assist me from point 1 to point 1001. Until annoying.*

*The third one I want to thank is a counselor named Kiki. She also assisted me from point 1. And more importantly for me, she read it.*

*The rest of my friends/acquaintances did not want anything to do with it in the process of writing this book. An old saying that my mother came up with says:*

*Whoever understands the people, will love the animals!*

*When all Hope disappears, waiting for a new start,  
**NAMTILLAKU** appears.*

*The axis of the Earth Black of Ashe's has become only than  
starts the earthly misses.*

***NAMTILLAKU** has spoken his Ordeal, even in your last  
breath you're Days are not counted yet.*

*The Eternal life have given, would be your only desire to Die .*

*So, you think you know what hell is?*

*No one you trust your hands Freezing.*

*No one who pays your Toll, forever thinking that you have  
failed.*

*Your eyes black as the Death for eternally thrive on the one  
who offered you.*

*Judgement and Eternally waiting till the **PAYMENT** is  
Completed.*

***NAMTILLAKU NAMTILLAKU NAMTILLAKU***

*Why did you do this to me?*

*The only question what remains in Eternal suffering...*

**NAMTILLAKU**

**NAMTILLAKU**

**NAMTILLAKU**

**I BEG YOU WHY DID YOU DO THIS TO ME?**

*Why me?*

# *Notes:*

1. \_\_\_\_\_

2. \_\_\_\_\_

3. \_\_\_\_\_

4. \_\_\_\_\_

5. \_\_\_\_\_

6. \_\_\_\_\_

7. \_\_\_\_\_

8. \_\_\_\_\_

9. \_\_\_\_\_

10. \_\_\_\_\_

11. \_\_\_\_\_

